Ore no Osananajimi wa Joshikousei de Yuusha

Readlists

Ore no Osananajimi wa Joshikousei de Yuusha

Associated Names :

My Childhood Friend is a High School Girl and a Hero of Another World but It Looks Like There's More To Her Than That.

Author(s) :

Yamadanaka Mikiya

TL : lavyde (http://www.novelupdates.com/group/larvyde/)

Compiled : Feinzell

Synopsis :

High school sophomore Shimoyama Yuuki’s childhood friend Arina goes on a journey to defeat the Demon King as a Hero on her 17th birthday.

Worried about his all-too-unsociable childhood friend, Yuuki went along with her on her journey, however…

Fantastic obstacles await them on their destination, or they should be, but Arina is behaving strangely sometimes…

Chapter 1 – The Bandits' Throes of Death

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/04/25/joshippoi-01/

"Hyahaaa!"
"We did it Boss!"
The 5 bandits who made this place their stronghold were returning with delight in their voices.
They were all giants with a body height of over 2 meters, burly limbs like logs covered in muscle. They had a mad glint in their eyes showing that they do not feel guilty for their crimes.
They were villains well known in the area as kidnappers.
They took out what was inside the hemp bag one of them was carrying.

It was a girl.

The dirty-looking girl with her hair in two long braids was bound with straw rope. Her eyes were closed, probably unconscious.
"Anyhow, looks like she's not from around here by her clothes, huh. She a foreigner?" said one of the men.
What the girl was wearing was clearly a high-school-mandated summer sailor uniform, but these barbarians don't seem to know that.
"I dunno. Still, she's definitely a virgin. She'll fetch a good price", one of the men that seems to be the leader said appraising the girl, stroking her chin.
"But Boss", another one of the men let out a coarse laugh, "we won't know that if we don't make sure."
"Hahaha, yer not wrong."
"Maybe we ought to do a little 'sampling'."
The sound of the bandits' eerie, lustful laughter filled the innards of the cave.

"Uhh.."
It might have been because of the laughter, but the girl opened her eyes.
"Hey, the young lady's woken up."
"Hehehehe. Looks like she's just in time for the party."

Being looked down upon by several bandits, the girl noticed the predicament

she was in.

"D, don't come…! —Yuu-kun! Where is Yuu-kun!?"

"Yuukun?"
"Ah, she's talking about the boy she's with right?"
"He's her boyfriend from the looks of it"
"He he he, don't worry, we're soon gonna make you forget about that boy."
"You'll be making some unforgettable memories with us."
"Hyahahaha"
The men approached the girl, surrounding her.

"Noooooo! H, help me! Help me Yuu-kun!"
The girl called for the boy, half in panic.
But to the bandits, that was no more than a spice that heightened their arousal.
"She's calling out for the man she loves."
"Good good, I'm getting hot. I like this kinda thing."
Mercilessly, the men took the girl by her arm.
"Noo! D, don't come…! Yuu-kun… Help me Yuu-kun!!"
"Gyahaha, what an idiot. It'll take half a day to get here from the forest by foot.
"He won't catch up with us who came on horses."
"That boy won't make it in time even if he ran as fast as he can."

"Ah, so that's how it is."
The girl suddenly stopped screaming.

"Hm?"
"Eh?"
"Ah?"
"Oh?"

"That was a miscalculation. I thought I could finally get Yuu-kun some EXP", she said nonchalantly. She stood up, ignoring the dumbfounded bandits.
Then as she let out a "hupp", the straw rope swiftly came undone, releasing her.
"Wai….!"
"Eh, ha? How?"
As if she was checking her body's condition, the girl made a light stretch.
"It's just a simple trap-cancelling magic, but scum like you who can't hold a

candle to Yuu-kun probably don't know that."
"Ma, magic!?"
"How can this little girl use magic"?
"You ask a lot of questions for scum. Well, I'll tell you one thing."

Just like that, the girl disappeared in a flash.

"S, she disappeared?"
"Did she run away?"
"Dammit, after her! Don't let her get away!"
"O, oi, wait!"
The men became agitated, but one of them stopped the others. He looked around, confirming an uneasy feeling he had.
"Where's Boss?"
Crasssssh!

'The Boss' came down from the ceiling.
"Mo…. Monster", said the giant who was severely struck in the back, forcing out his voice, coughing froth out of his mouth. Then he collapsed and stopped moving.

"Hiii!?"

The bandits shuddered.
The girl came down from the celing, landing on top of 'the Boss' and said,
"You see, Arina's body and heart belongs to Yuu-kun. Touching by anyone other than Yuu-kun is not allowed. Otherwise it's burglary you know? BURGLARY!"
She jumped off 'the Boss's back and with a speed the eye can't hope to follow, caught another man by the nape of his neck.
"Hi, hiiiiii!? He, help!"
"Stealing is bad you know? Did Yuu-kun say you're allowed to r●pe Arina? Did you get permission from him? You were going to ra●e me without his proper say-so?"

BAM

The man was thrown onto the wall.
"Trash like you laying a hand on Yuu-kun's property? Because of this useless thing dangling here?"

She kicked his nether regions with aaaallllll her might.

“Gaa….!”

The man’s eyes turned white.

Then a large amount of blood flowed from his nether regions.

Never mind the man’s life, his manhood had certainly met its end.

“M, monstrous…!”

“Of course. You were going to lay your hands on something that belongs to Yuu-kun so of course this happens. It’s painfully obvious that you’re getting punished right? Yes that’s right, there’s no mistake, yes, that’s right isn’t it?”

The girl slowly turned her head to face the trembling men and let out a wide grin.

“You all think so too, right?”

“Y, yes!!”

Unable to beg for their lives, the men followed suit.

When they did, the girl nodded in satisfaction.

“Yes. Arina thinks so too. So in place of Yuu-kun, Arina’s going to…”

“… give everyone …”

“… equal …”

“… punishment, okay♪”

“Eeeeeeeeeek!!”

“H, hehehehehe”

“Help meeeeeeee!!”

The men screamed and started running like spider hatchlings scattering about.

However, upon the one and only exit a face of despair was smiling on them. The girl was already one step ahead of them.

“Why are you running? You can’t get the punishment if you ran you know? Oh, and you should also get a punishment for running, okay?”

One of the men was caught by the girl.

“A, An-chan! Jirou, Jirou’s caught!”

“He’s a goner, let’s run!”

“D, d, d…. Don’t leave meeeeee!”

“FirstOfAllTheFactThatTheGenesOfAllTheMalesInTheWorldIsNoMatchFor

Yuu-kun’sSuperiorDnaButIfIExterminatedThemAllYuu-kun’sChildrenAreGoingTo HaveToCommitIncestSoIAllowedThemToLiveThisIsAPerfectPlanRightButIThink EradicatingUselessGenesIsAllowedAndShouldBeDoneRightYouThinkSoToo Right?”

While the girl was saying something unintelligible as if chanting a spell with an ecstatic look, she carelessly threw down the man called Jirou and picked up a moderate-sized stone.
“Stop, please, forgive me, GAA!”
She swung the stone downward.
Splat, fresh blood coated the walls of the cave.
“Jiroooooou !!! An-chan, she killed Jirou…”
“Monste…oof!!!”
“An-chaaaaaaaan!?”
Kicked up by the girl, ‘An-chan’ who was instantly turned into a lump of meat from the shock was thrown off to the end of the sky.
There was an expression that goes “he became a star”, but with that altitude he might’ve become one for real.
The girl smiled at the remaining man.

“HeyIDon’tReallyDoMuchGarbageProcessingInFrontOfYuu-kunSoHe’sProbably GoingToBeFrightenedFufuHe’sCuteRightThatYuu-kunHe’sTheCoolestAndThe CutestAndTheGreatestInTheWholeWorldActuallyAnyManOtherThanYuu-kun Don’tDeserveToBeCalledMenActuallyTheWordManItselfOnlyMeansYuu-kunSo SomethingLikeYouOughtToBeCalledSomethingElseProbablyYouNeedToBe BiologicallyClassifiedAsUglyCreatureRightOfCourseThenMaybeYouWould UnderstandYuu-kun’sGreatnessALittleBitOrMaybeYouWon’tUnderstandAh That’sRightYou’reSomethingElseSoSorrySorryThatWasProbablyTooDifficultFor You.”

“G, go away! GO AWAAAAAY!!!”
The man straddled his horse and frantically swung the whip to escape.
He was going to run a long way away and survive.

But,

“Ahahaha, that’s weird. You can’t run away like that you know.”
“Eek!?”

“Ahaha, ahahaha. If you want to get away you need to run faster.”
The man’s face bent into a look of death.
He should’ve escaped so why is the girl there.
He made the horse run so why is the girl laughing and walking relaxedly.
Faster, faster!
The horse neighed, the scenery blurred.
“Ahahahahaha. Ahahahahahahahahaha”

—How could she catch up with him!?

In actuality, what the man was straddling over and frantically whipping was just a large rock sticking out from the ground, but he did not realize it because of a certain magic.

Frightened at the girl, the man frantically whipped the rock, assaulted by terror each time he turned his head.
Laughing scornfully at the humorous spectacle, the girl enjoyed herself and slowly, slowly went toward the man’s back. Then she raised the bloody stone up above his head.
“D… demon…, You’re a mad demon!”
“Nuh-uh, that’s not right”, she smiled again with her whole face, “I’m Arina, the Hero of this world.”

“Arinaaaa—! Where are you—!!”
Coming out of the forest, a boy searched frantically for the girl. He only looked away for a little while and she was not there.
He heard rumors that there were bandits around here that would attack and carry travelers off.
… He was full of worry that it was exactly what happened.
“Please be safe”, he murmured as he aimlessly wandered the unfamiliar highway.

He had been running for 30 minutes.
“Kyaaaaaa!”, a shriek echoed nearby.
It was unmistakably Arina’s!
“Arinaa!”
The boy shouted out and ran, following the scream.
He ran over to some plains on the other side of a hill, and the girl called Arina

was there.
She was petrified and unable to move, surrounded by three wolf-like monsters called ‘Beowulves’.
“Auuu, Yu, Yuu-kun, Help!”
“Dammit! You’re always causing trouble!”
The fact that she’s called a ‘hero’, there must have been something wrong there, no?
The boy took out the cheap sword he just bought and jumped in, facing the Beowulves.

“It’s dangerous so get back!”
“Y, yes… So, sorry.”
“Talk later! Get behind by back and don’t move!”
“A, all right!”
Brandishing the sword, the boy battled the monsters.

Behind him, Arina was smiling.
“Once I beat the Demon King and conquered the world, I’m going to give Yuu-kun a present. Please wait just a little while, okay.♪”

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 2 – My Childhood Friend Seems to Be a Hero but I Can't Let Her Go Alone

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/04/25/joshiyuusha-02/

This happened during the season where Japan is ruled by the chorus of cicadas and the sweltering sun. The closing ceremony marking the start of summer vacation had ended, and we were on our way back home from school.
"Ah, Wait a minute"
… I scratched my ears and asked Arina again. That was because I did not understand what she meant.
"Say it again."
"A, all right Yuu-kun. I'm sorry I worded it badly so Yuu-kun can't understand."
"Yuu-kun" is the nickname she selfishly came up with on her own to refer to me.
My name is Shimoyama Yuuki.
I'm a high school sophomore.
I have no special hobbies. I am an ordinary person who gets troubled because I can't say anything much when I have to introduce myself.

Then, the one being self-deprecating in front of me is my childhood friend Sakurai Arina.
She's a plain, braided, pitiful-looking girl who always walks while looking downwards.
Ordinary boy-girl childhood friends would cut off relations once they get to middle school, but this girl had always been so dull that she doesn't have any other friends. Because she was always alone I can't leave her on her own, and when I noticed it she had been dragging alongside me ever since grade school.

It's just me saying this, but if she faced forwards and smiled she had a relatively cute face. If only she had more confidence in herself she could have gotten herself a boyfriend, but….

Back to the topic.

I was about to give her some simple congratulations for her 17th birthday today when she started saying something like this.

“Yuu-kun, ah, ummm. Arina is, you know, a Hero. Hero of another world…. e, ehehehe.”
—, what?
You’d want to ask again wouldn’t you?
“I totally have no idea what you’re saying.”
“Y y y, yeah, that’s true. You won’t understand. Because Arina is an idiot.”
“Being an idiot has nothing to do with it. Even an idiot… Huh? what? A Hero? You?”
“Yeah, looks that way”
While she said that she rummaged her school-mandated bag and took something out.
A metal hairband…. no, a metal circlet studded with a red gem that totally screams ‘Hero!’
Arina put it on her head and said, “Look…. the legendary equipment, see?”
What do you mean *‘see?’*
The sight of her wearing a deep blue sailor uniform and a thick metal circlet was somewhat bizarre.
A normal friend would go like this:
[Ahahaha, a joke, huh? That’s not funny at all, you know]
“You, did you fall for some dubious fraud? It’s a bit eccentric for a fraud but if it’s you then it might just be possible”
“Umm, that’s not, uh… S, s, sorry!”
Because she immediately apologized the conversation stopped there.
This is why I’m just about the only one who could hold a conversation with her, by coaxing this and that out of her, I was able to finally grasp the whole picture.

In the morning of her 17th birthday, this girl’s mother said this:
“Arina… Arina, get up. Today you’re going to meet the King in the castle.”
At this point I already wanted to retort, but I just took it and let it go.
Then of course, this simpleton of a girl answered just like this:
“Mom, I don’t understand.”
Well of course.
“Listen, I’ve never talked about this until now, but your late father was a Hero from another world. So, you who have the Hero’s blood in you have to go on a journey to defeat the Demon King once you turn 17.”

She was talking about something completely removed from the common sense I knew.
If what she said was true then doesn't it sound like Auntie is in need of counseling?
Despite having the topic explained to her in detail, it took the slow-headed Arina several seconds before she finally understood.
"I see. So I, I can use magic."
"Eh, wait a minute. Stop, reminiscence STOP!"
Arina stood dumbfounded, making a face like she did not understand why she was being stopped.
"What, … you can use magic?"
"Y, yeah. Is it weird?"
"It's not *'is it weird'*. Aah, I really wanted to retort. You try using magic then."
"E, eh… B, but, it's dangerous."
"Don't worry about it, hurry and do it."
I was already prepared to see her fail and was ready to continue the conversation with words to the tune of, [See, there was no magic or anything. You might have mistaken it for something else].

However,

"Fire Magic"
As she chanted the spell, from her fingertip a flame gushed out making a blazing sound.
It then scorched a nearby wall black, she stopped it one second late.
"Huwhaaaaaat!?"
This girl really made fire come out.
"I, I burned the wall. A, are they going to get angry?"
Arina became flustered over the wrong detail.
"T, they're going to get angry at Arina so Yuu-kun should run. Yuu-kun didn't do anything bad!"
"Hey, give me your hand!"
I examined the hand of Arina who was saying something incomprehensible.
There were no aerosol sprays or tricks like that. To begin with, this girl was not equipped with the brain tissue to make a bluff like that. She is a simpleton but that was exactly why I am obliged to believe in her.

"… can you make something other than fire come out."
"T, there's wind and water and lightning. Just a little bit more and I can fly in the sky."
Eh—, what, eh—?
The fact that my childhood friend can use magic is… I don't know how to respond…
Being too perplexed, my thought process stopped. Arina, who was well attuned to my behaviour said,
"S, sorry, I'm very sorry…. I surprised you didn't I? I wonder if I might be disgusting."
Making such a negative misunderstanding, Arina's face started to contort as she was about to cry.
"I, if Yuu-kun throws me away, A, Arina has no more reason to live."
She needs to get over her dependence on me one day, but right now, rather than that,

"So? … You're a Hero then?"
"Yeah, I'm sorry. For being a Hero."
"And you're going on a journey to defeat the Demon King."
"Yes, I'm sorry. It's summer after all, and I don't have anything to do, so I thought I might as well."
I'm getting a light headache, but in order to make everything clear, the only thing I can do right now is accept what she was talking about.

After being made to consent against my will, I said thus:
"Well, good luck then. I'll tell you this beforehand, I'm not going."
"Eh…… EEH!?"
"Don't go around expecting me to come with you like it's the obvious thing to do. I'm not your guardian. Just who do you think is going to go on a weird quest like that after finally getting a holiday…?"
"Uuu…", she sniffled.
"All right, if Yuu-kun says so, then Arina will go alone."
"Please do."
"W… will you grant me just one wish, though?"
I agreed, and,
"Can I have Yuu-kun's handkerchief?"

“What? Why?”

“A, a keepsake. I’m sure there will be a lot of difficult things and painful things, but if I can feel Yuu-kun beside me I’ll be alright.”

She’s too dependent.

I thought to say no, but after sending this girl off on her own, I thought it was better if I gave her some assistance.

“… here.”

I handed over a disheveled handkerchief out from my pocket.

“Uwaa! Yuu-kun’s handkerchief!”

She snatched it away like an animal jumping at meat.

“I use that to wipe away sweat and stuff you know.”

“I don’t mind.”

“Please mind. Wash it thoroughly before you go.”

“… like hell I would.”

“Huh?”

“No, it’s nothing. T, thank you!”

Ah, now that I think about it, I haven’t prepared a present for her birthday, thinking that it’s alright to do it later. If she was going to depart I’d better prepare one properly.

As I walked while thinking such things, “C, can I have one more thing?”, said Arina, “Yuu-kun’s hair. I wonder if I can have… just… a little bit…”

“Huh?”

“I said, um… hair. I heard somewhere long ago that when you talk about keepsakes, it would be a lover’s hair, o, o, of course Arina is not Yuu-kun’s girlfriend or anything but if I can have a little bit of Yuu-kun’s hair I’ll be very lucky.”

“———……”

“Uh, A, Arina is being creepy, aren’t I?”

You can’t settle the fact that she wanted my hair just by calling her creepy, but I’m not entirely surprised given that this girl does sometimes ask for strange things.

Furthermore, I wasn’t going to let go of the chance to give her a present.

“All right. Have at it.”

“T… Thank you very much! Thank you very much!”

As she thanked me over and over she took out a pair of scissors and cut off a nice bit off my hair.
“H, hair… Yuu-kun’s hair… Ehe, … ehehehe.”
She excitedly put that hair inside a small zip-locked plastic bag.
Uwaa—.
“If you don’t stop that weird hobby of yours, people are really going to stay away.”
“T, that’s true isn’t it. B, but, hair, I’ve always wanted this.”
Well, whatever.
Everyone has a weird hobby or two, as long as nobody finds out she’ll be fine.
At any rate, today is her birthday.
I’ll let her do as she wishes.
“U, um, um. I might as well ask now that we’re talking about it.”
“What is it.”
“Yuu-kun’s fingernails. Can I have those too?”
I take that back.
“What are you planning to do, gathering hair and fingernails! Are you going to put a curse on me!?”
“Never, I would never put a curse on Yuu-kun! I didn’t mean to do something like that! I, I just wanted to make a summer full of memories with Yuu-kun before I go.”
“Wha, wait! Don’t say something that invites misunderstandings like that!”
“Ah, aaaaaaaaa I’m so sorry! Arina is being lustful! I, I’ll apologize by dying!”
“Never mind about death! Staying alive is fine! Calm down a bit!”
“As my present for the underworld I’ll have Yuu-kun’s uniform…”
“What are you a Datsue-ba?” «TN: Datsue-ba: an old woman who strips the clothes of children who wanted to cross the river to the underworld.»

No good. I can’t let this girl go off on a journey on her own!” «TN: hook, line, and sinker»

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 3 – Elixir-Replica System

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/04/27/joshiyuusha-03/

I hate myself for being too eager to help.
Honestly I kind of expected this kind of development so I was going to shrug it off, but departing on the very same day was too much.

Luckily I was attending a boarding school, and also, my parents are pretty lax. Simply by saying “I’m not coming home this year” is enough for them.

I then started preparing but when I looked at the clock, there was only one hour left until the promised time.
In order to travel we needed the wormhole called the ‘travel gate’, but the times it could be opened is severely restricted.
Fantasy had already encroached on my reality.
They told me I had to strictly observe the time for that reason, but just what kind of preparations do you do before going to another world, anyway?
First of all I packed a torch, smartphone, a change of clothes… Aaah, whatever, I don’t care!
Along the way I got irritated and just packed at random and left the dorm just in time for the departure.

“We~ll then Yuu-kun. You know about RPGs, don’t you?”
Once I arrived at the Sakurai house, the mother, Emiko-san, started a crash course before departure.
She made to have an intellectual impression by wearing narrow glasses and a suit, but despite her going for the college professor look, well, her appearance feels more like a female teacher.
She looked so young she doesn’t seem like she had a 17 year old daughter.
“Well, it would be much stranger if I didn’t know, right?”
When I heard that it had something like a ‘travel gate’ I imagined a more dungeon-like house, but it turned out to be a normal 2-storied detached house.

When I entered high school I started living in the dorms, but I heard the single-mother Sakurai family just moved in in their entirety. This is the first time I

stepped in their house since I came here.

“Rather, I thought I could hear more about Arina being a Hero.”
“The world you’re going to go to resembles the fantasy worlds inside RPGs a lot.”
“So your stance is to not take any questions, huh”
“I’m sorry, we really don’t have much time.”
Emiko-san, with her wavy hair swinging and her lips colored with lipstick, apologized. The scent of some quality perfume lightly floated about.

… Just how did this ero-beauty give birth to a plain child like that.

“Yuu-kun, have you ever cleared a fantasy-style RPG?”
“One or two big-name ones when I was a kid.”
“Okay. So I won’t need to explain much about the genre. Can you lend me your smartphone?”
Emiko-san took my smartphone, then attached a cable onto it and connected it to a PC. She seems to be installing some app into it.

Even though I didn’t really want to tamper with it since it’s not an ordinary smartphone, but a school-provided tool called an ‘E:ID’ containing my electronic student ID, among other things.

“Then, never mind the Hero Arina, do you know what you should do first when you’re suddenly thrown into a fantasy world?”
While doing that, Emiko-san continued talking.
“No, not at all.”
“Of course, right. So what about RPGs?”
Emiko-san disconnected the phone from the cord and continued her customizations with a previously prepared component and screwdriver.
“… Don’t break that please”, I said to her in worry.
“Answer the question please” was her reply, half-ignoring me.

“Umm. Beginning from the starting village, defeat low-level enemies to gather EXP… I think.”
“Bingo, correct. That’s the theory. Even if you don’t have the ability to explore a fantasy world, you do have one to clear RPGs.”
“Though I don’t get what you’re trying to say from the beginning.”
“It’s about Yuu-kun roughly answering how he was going to live in a fantasy

world. … here you go, it's done."
As she was saying that she handed back my smartphone.

The smartphone was put into a strange case and became one size bigger. When I touched it, it made a 'bo-n' sound, and a semi-transparent screen appeared before my eyes.
The terminal screen was displayed to me in 3D, it was a truly futuristic thing.

"Cool, what's this!"

I unintentionally blurted out.
"A chance to experiment for my research. I'm glad you liked it♪"

The words [Elixir-Replica System] was displayed on the terminal screen.

"Eluks?" «TN: Elixir-Replica System was written in the Latin alphabet, which he apparently can't read»
"It's read as Elixir-Replica System."
"Waa, that's really a fantasy-ish name. It's really got the mood going!"
"Huhuhu, It's to early to be happy~"
Emiko-san touched the screen, and more windows appeared.

[Status]

[Skills]

[Items]

[Other]

They were all commands like ones you'd see in RPGs.
"Yuu-kun, take this."
I put on the wristband she handed over.
Then I pressed [Status].

Name: Shimoyama Yuuki, Job: High School Student
LV: 1
HP: 100, MP: 100%
STR: 5, AGI: 5, INT:3, LUK: 0

Just like that, my status was out in the open.

“Uwaa, it’s really like an RPG! I’m worried about the zero LUK, though.”
“This is the answer from before. If Yuu-kun is going to live in a fantasy world, it’s better to represent reality as a RPG system. It’s putting this world’s [common sense] into a world lacking in one.”
Okay, I don’t get it.
For the time being, I simply nodded.

“I’ve been analyzing Arina’s power for some time now and developed this system. The numbers appearing here denote your own abilities.”
“Eh? but MP? Can I use magic too?”
“If I had to say then this is something like the remaining battery power, I think. This remodeled smartphone takes in the ‘mana’ existing in the air automatically as a replacement for electrical power. Then using this…”
Emiko-san then pressed the button labeled [Skills].

[Salamander Cannon 60%]

Those words appeared.
“… a special move?”, I asked, and Emiko-san giggled in affirmation.
“Use that when you’re in a pinch, okay♪”, she said.

She selected [Item] → [Store] and a laser beam came out from the edge of my smartphone. She pointed it at my backpack and after several seconds the backpack disappeared.
This time it’s the 4D P●cket feature. The difference is that this one seems to have a weight limit.
The [Items] display now shows [Backpack], [Change of Clothes], and [Chocolate].
“Chocolate?”
“I was in a hurry, seems to have gotten in by mistake.”

Strapping the smartphone on the wristband makes for a simple adventuring set.
“All preparations are finished, then♪”, she said that and looked at her watch.
“… Oh my, look at the time. I have a very important meeting to go to today.”
She paled and started the preparations in a hurry.
“You said there was no time but it was because of your personal business!?”
“That’s right, professors are busy you know.”

“Eh. You’re not going to see your daughter off!?”
“She’ll be fine, Yuu-kun is coming along after all.”
… the smartphone and all, it looks like this mother-daughter pair went with the premise that I’ll be coming along.

“Huh, that reminds me, where’s Arina? She’s not here.”
Normally she’d be in the background and not noticeable.
While we’re having this conversation, the lead actor Arina wasn’t present.
“Arina would be getting ready in her room. Girls take a lot of time to prepare.
Ah, you’re not allowed to peek, okay?”
Are you dumb or what.
We’re not going out shopping you know.

“Well then, as for Arina, I’m Coun Ting On You, okay! Ciao☆”

Lightly waving her hand, Emiko-san rushed outside.
No, really, she looks young for a mother.
Being single for such a long time, she must be clearly putting her guard up, huh.
She had a much more mature image the last time I saw her long ago, too…
Well, it was probably too much for a little boy to understand a woman’s charm.

Huh.
Now that I think of it, she was dazzling me with ultra high-tech items and left off the essential parts of the story.
Like what the Demon King actually was, or if there were things like monsters, or how we’re going to actually depart to begin with…
While I was thinking this and that, the second floor became very noisy.
“Awawawawa!”
The Hero-sama appeared, tumbling down the staircase.
Her mother said she was getting ready, but she’s still wearing the circlet and sailor uniform.
What about the preparations?
“I, I’m sorry! I overslept!!”
“Huwhaaaaaaaaaat!!?”
I’m so angry I think I’m popping blood vessels on my head!
“Stop fooling around, you! Just whose departure do you think I’m coming along with!?”

“I’m so sorry! I’m so sorry! I was enjoying my birthday too much yesterday I couldn’t get much sleep. I, I’ll lick your shoes and all so please forgive me.”
“Don’t lick them! It’s half your own hobby anyway, isn’t it!”
“Noo! Saying it’s a hobby is… ————ah—.”
It looks like I made her realize her own inclinations.

“I’ve never heard of a Hero waking up to her masochism right before setting off, you know. Seriously, you.”
“N, nono, that’s not true! I’m just saying that I don’t mind any treatment from Yuu-kun! Even if Yuu-kun kicks me or hits me I won’t mind.”
“Oi cut it out!! ENOUGH!!”
My anxiety for this journey just grew like a snowball.
“T, ttttttt that’s right, we don’t have time! Get your shoes and follow me to the basement!”
With that Arina took my hand and led me down to the basement.

——hm?

“… Arina, are you wearing perfume?”
“Eh? I’m not wearing any.”
“Well, you smell like Emiko-san.”
“Eh? Eh? … Mother’s always hugging me, so maybe the scent rubbed off on me? I, is perfume-scented Arina, d, digusting?”
“No, well, it’s just a faint scent so it’ll be fine…”
Arina sniffed on her sleeves for a little while, but finally abandoned the thought.
“A, anyway, w, we have to hurry.”
She ran down to the basement.

In the basement, there is an egg-shaped ‘mechanism’ somewhat larger than me.
It is wired together with pipes and cables, and there is a monitor to its side that is continuously spewing letters, digits, and symbols.
Wham, *wham*, it sounded of heavy moving parts.
It seems that it had a machine room underneath.
The surface of the egg is marked with the letters [A･R･N].
It was probably some kind of initials.
“I, is this the ‘travel gate’?”

“Yeah. Sorry, it’s something like this.”
It looked like a SF machine you probably won’t see outside of a certain well-known theme park, it only made my worries grow.
“Can we make it work.”
“Don’t worry. Mother taught me how.”
“Umm…”, Arina said, fumbling with the keyboard.
If possible I wanted Emiko-san herself to do it.
“I’ve confirmed the coordinates, ‘Ivan Castle Town’… N, now we’ll be able to meet with the King before the day is over.”
I guess the procedures for adventuring are the same everywhere, huh.

Pi… PiPi… *gakon*

The surface of the egg opened wide vertically.
Then, from behind it came a brilliant light.
Uwaa, what’s this…

So—scary—

“N, now the preparations are complete! It’s finally finished.”
Arina puffed out her chest, revealing her enthusiasm.
“Are we going to jump into this?”
“Y, yes, that’s right!”
Uwaa, no way.
I don’t want Arina to find out, but jumping into a dubious machine is *this* scary, you know.
“Yosh! Let’s go!”
“U, uh huh.”
“…, let’s go!”
“U, uh huh.”
“Yuu-kun?”
“U, uh huh.”
I replied with nothing but noncommittal responses, so Arina gazed at me.
“Might you actually be, scared?”
……..
……..
“…… N …NOT A CHANCE!”

“That’s right isn’t it. I, if it’s Yuu-kun, you won’t be scared of something like this, right!
Yuu-kun getting scared is…
i, impossible.
A, Arina is stupid huh.
S, sorry, okay!
B, because Arina is stupid…!”
Despite deprecating herself this girl is good at concocting situations I can’t run away from!
Dammit, I guess I have to do it.
“A, Arina!”
“Yes!”
“Come with meeeeeeeeeeee!”

Jumped in!

The machine!

Blue sky and refreshing wind.
A large grassy plain and a scenery overflowing with idyllic calmness.
A clear flowing stream, and a rolling water wheel powered by that stream.
Here and there there were small sheds dotting the place, I could catch glimpses of people working.
I can hear goats bleating, *baa~*

… In this 100% absolute boondocks of a village entrance, I asked Arina.
“Oi. Just what part of this is a castle town?”
“A, aaaaaaaaah, uhmmm, ummm…”
Arina turned pale and started to tremble, clattering audibly.
“I’ll lick your shoes so please forgive me!”
As I thought. She did get her coordinates wrong.
My strength drained because of the Hero-sama who immediately made an epic fail, and sat down on the spot.
Our journey began just like this.
Firstly, this place is Occa village.

It was immediately after this that we heard rumors of repeated kidnapping incidents on the highway to Ivan Castle.

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 4 – Kyaho~i! Welcome to Occa Village!

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/05/11/joshiyuusha-04/

‘People who haven’t experienced a journey make mistakes in their travels, and learn from those mistakes’

Those were zen-like words I read in a book somewhere.
When I read it I went “Ain’t that obvious ya dumbass”, and laughed out of my nose.

Right now I’m experiencing it with my body.

Our journey was too much of a snap decision.
Well, I do think I was forced into making a snap decision, but still, it was too much of one.
In the first place, before being another world whatchamacallit, this place is a ‘foreign country’.
A ‘foreign country’ where the language and the writing and the currency are different.
It was a total calamity for those with the mentality of an islander who doesn’t come into contact with another culture unless he crossed the sea.

When we were greeted by a well built old man at the village entrance, he said this to us with a smile.
“●＊※@#Σ…… ！”
I have no idea what he’s saying, but he’s saying it in a *really* friendly manner.
I think he’s probably saying something along the lines of [welcome to our village, O travellers]
Since he was talking to me so spontaneously, I couldn’t even say I didn’t understand him, and just nodded with a smile.
Then he gestured and said “waho~i!” or “yaho~i!” or something like that in a large voice.
It was probably a mark of affection or something.

… I’ve no idea what I should do now.

For now I’ll just make a light smile.

“Hehehe…”
I responded halfheartedly.
I actually think it was a very Japanese conservative attitude.
As I did so,
“●×※！　＠＆＄！　——kyaho~i！”
The old man said one or two words in high spirits and gestured once again.
His gesture seems like he’s saying [Hey, hey, you do it too!]

‘Do it’, he said?

‘Say kyaho~i together with me’, he said?

‘Say kyaho~i sober together with this old man you just met’, he said?

“※＄! Kyaho~i!”
“Kya… kyaho~i…”
“＃％×※ッ!!”
Ah. I know what he’s saying.
[Nononono that’s not how you do it! Put more spirit into it!]
This is *that*, isn’t it.
That trope where he absolutely won’t release me unless I resign myself.
“※＄! Kyaho~i！”
“Kya, kyaho~i”
“※＄!　※※Δ!　Kyaho~i!”
“Kyaho~i!”
“※＄! Kyaho~i!”
“Kyaho~i!” “Kyaho~i!”
“Kyaho~i!” “Kyaho~i!”
“Hahahaha!　＋％＄＃＃ッ!!”
4 or 5 kyahois later the old man laughed and patted my shoulder with a pop.
Then he left, looking satisfied, while saying a word or two.

“……”
“……”
“……”
“……”
“…… Y, Yuu-kun…?”
“Don’t talk to me right now.”
“A, all right. I, I’m sorry, okay?”

There's no way you'd understand my feelings after doing something that embarrassing in front of a childhood friend.

"We don't understand the language. What should we do?"
"W… what should we do…"
"Anyway, you… You've got money don't you?"
"M, maybe two thousand yen?"
"Not Japanese Yen! This world's money! And you can't travel cross-country with just two thousand yen!"
"Auuuu, please don't retort twice in a single sentence."
After I spun Arina round and round,

"I… don't have money."

… she confessed.
"Huwhaaaaat!?"
"A, actually, not even the two thousand yen."
"Not even that!? That doesn't matter anymore now! You missed our landing spot and don't even have money! What do you suppose we should do from now on!?"
"I, IIIIIIII'm so sorry!! I'll lick your shoes!!!!"
"You think I'll forgive everything if you lick my shoes!!!?"
"I'm sorry! I'm sorry! Arina's dull and stupid and a useless hero! Please abuse me until you're satisfied!"
The masochist's strongest desire came out all of a sudden!
Honestly, I'm impressed.

Dammit, she'd gleefully accept any blame from me, like *that* will solve anything…
"Even if we want to sell our belongings we don't understand their language."
"… there is."
"huh?"
"Something I can sell without needing to understand their language. There is one!"
Arina made a face as if she's determined to do something, bit her lips and stood up.
"You! stop! With how the conversation's going you're absolutely up to nothing

good.”
“I, I’ll be all right. I’ll bear with any partner no matter what they’re like if it’s for Yuu-kun’s sake.”
“OI STOP IT!”
“B, bbbbut, mother said if I just roll up my skirt anywhere along the highway and endure the pain for one night I can get money.”
“STOP IT! STOP IT!”
Just what are you teaching your daughter, professor!

“Well, off course, I can’t deny its effectiveness as a last resort no matter what country you’re in, but just calm down for a minute. I don’t want to be witnessing the birth of an ●cchi Hero.”
“Y, yes…”
Arina became dejected.
“Right, if Emiko-san could even make a high-tech mecha, I don’t think she’d throw us out here without preparing anything…”
As I said that, I touched my smartphone.
I booted the [Elixir-Replica System] whatsisname.
If I fiddle with this, I might get something…

[Speak]

“hm?”

[Speak]

“What’s this command…”
Eh. No way.
I had a hunch of what it’s for, and went to the old man from earlier.
“U, … uncle!”
“※◇? Δ※#……”
I faced the old man and pressed the [Speak] command.

“… What’s that? You’re wearing a weird gauntlet there, boy.”

……. I worked! I can understand him!
The old man’s words reached my ears in Japanese.
“Uncle, this place, where is it?”
“Ah? Where you say? This is Occa village.”

It worked the other way, too.
Seems like this [Speak] command is an automatic translation system. «TN: would our lives not be so much easier if we had MTL this good.»
With this language won't be a problem anymore.
'Putting our [common knowledge] into a world lacking in common sense'
Was this what she meant by that.
—I wish she explained it more clearly…
At any rate, it looks like there are still more functions to this smartphone.
For now I'll do some intelligence gathering!

"… I see, you were heading towards Ivan castle, but lost your way, and the money you prepared for the journey ran out, is it?"
I explained the details, twisting it a bit.
Obviously I can't say that I came from another world with barely anything besides the shirt on my back.
"But there's only one straight highway to Ivan castle, so you saying you ran out of money on the way is a bit lacking in credibility."
"uu.."
The old man stared at me in doubt.
"If you have to lie then tell something more believable. Though I don't feel like interrogating you for it."
He said that and smiled.
"Well, life's got its ups and downs."
… I was lucky my first contact was with this man.

"I can't give you Coin for free, but it doesn't look like you have time to earn them, either."
"I'm very sorry. We need to get to Ivan castle by today."
"That place, huh. Yup, you won't get there unless you hurry. You're bringing that young lady with you, right?"
"… Just tell me the way. We'll manage through sheer willpower then."
"Don't be daft. You've got no weapons do you? Though it's called a highway monsters come out a lot, there are also bandits that target travelers."
So they really come out, huh. Monsters.
What should I do now…
"Come along."

At the urging of the old man, I found myself at a hut.
“What’s this place?”
“The only shop in the village. It’s a general store.”
He opened the door, and we entered a six-and-a-half square meter storehouse where swords and shields and staves and all sorts of things were scattered down on the floor.
“Ah— welcome!”
A bald geezer sat behind the counter, looking like he lacked motivation.
“Gramps, I found a traveler. He’s got no weapons, sell him something to defend himself with. Just give him the cheapest one.”
The old man said so, and,
“I got a scrap iron sword over there. That’ll be 50 Gold.”
Ah.
So this world’s currency is Gold.
Well, it’s Emiko-san’s translation program though, it might have come out of her playfulness.
“It’s fifty, do you have that?”
I already told the old man, the answer was NO.
“You’re really penniless, huh…”
Haah, he sighed.
Before that, I don’t know the value of currency in this world to begin with.
“Umm, is there anything I can sell for 50 gold? Food for instance.”
“50 gold is, let’s see. About 1 person’s portion of stuffed intestine, I think.”
Stuffed intestine is like a wiener, right?
So about the price of a side dish for dinner.
… that’s really cheap, isn’t it.

Anyway, since I don’t have money I don’t have a choice but to barter. I clicked on the smartphone’s [Item] command and checked whether I have any valuables.
My backpack is full with lots of things, but there’s nothing good in it… What’s this ‘metal washbasin’. What the hell was I going to do with it.
“Heee… That’s a weird gauntlet you got there.”
My smartphone caught the general store geezer’s interest.
“I, it’s not for sale! … ah.”

I found something interesting.

“Do you know about something called Chocolate?”
“Ha?”
“Choco?”
The two men made a good reaction.
If I had to pay a portion of food, then a piece of a strange food would do just fine.
I clicked on the chocolate.
[Ready]
I faced the counter and shot a beam.
After a beep, a bar of chocolate solidified from a semitransparent projection.

“Oooh…”
“What the…!”
Catching their attention like this felt good.
I handed each of them a small piece of the chocolate. I urged the suspicious two to put it in their mouths.

“What is this!?”
“I’ve never had something like this!”

Good, good. Very good.
“Can I exchange this for the sword?”
The geezer immediately consented.
The scrap iron sword doesn’t seem to be worth all that much in the first place.

It was a simple weapon, consisting of a 1 meter-long blade and a handle with a grip on it covered in cloth.
The so-called blade is only a flat, thick iron plate, and it didn’t have the feel of a sword edge.
What’s more, the blade was made from iron or copper or some indistinct metal randomly melted down into an alloy, it had the brittleness of cast metal, and seemed to be nearing the end of its service life.

I see, it’s a cheap weapon.
But it’s still better than nothing, right now, I feel it’s an indispensable weapon for me.

I put the sword away in the smartphone.
‘Scrap Iron Sword’ appeared in the [Items] column.

“Thank you for everything.”
After leaving the general store, I thanked the old man.
“What’s this? I didn’t do anything. I don’t know what your situation is, but protect the little lady, all right!”
Though she’s like that, she’s a ‘Hero’ you know.
I wanted to say that, but never mind.
“I got nothing but this, but have it as a farewell gift.”
The old man gave me a transparent bottle.
“It’s liquor, be careful with it. It’s cheap stuff so don’t drink too much.”
You’re giving alcohol to a minor… well, this isn’t Japan.
“Thank you very much.”
“Good luck boy! Kyaho~i!”
Ah—, *that* doesn’t translate.

Arina came up several times in conversation, but I totally forgot about her.
That weak presence of hers might be useful in stealth mahjong or stealth basketball.
She usually comes along on her own anyway so I don’t think about her too much.
I arrived back at the village entrance where she should have been waiting.

Huh?

Arina’s not here.
Even if I left her by herself she usually stays put, but it’s weird, she’s not here.
Did she seriously go and sell her bo…
Nonononono.
Of course she wouldn’t.
But where did she…

‘Though it’s called a highway monsters come out a lot, there are also bandits that target travelers.’

————……

I got a bad feeling about this.
Blood drained from my body, and I felt a chill on my fingertips.

Seriously? No, no way.

“Arinaaa…!!”

Unable to calm myself down, I left Occa village.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 5 – First Battle, and the Next

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/05/24/joshiyuusha-05/

Running along the highway, the vegetation gets thinner the further away I went from Occa village.
After reaching a certain boundary, the scenery completely changed, a lot of rugged rocky ground can be seen.
It seems the village is located in a grassy basin surrounded by gently sloping hills.

I looked for Arina. I started by going over the first hill, anyway, the visibility between the series of hills is bad. The scenery changed every time I crossed over a hill.
I think I understand why bandits would attack weak-looking travelers in this condition.
That alone made me more uneasy about Arina's safety.

"Arina~! Where are you~!~
I yelled loudly in vain, no reply came back.
Losing sight of her in another world not knowing what happens.
How careless.
… Could Arina by any chance already….
That idea passed by. I ran, trying to wipe away the thought.

I don't know how far I ran.
I've ran for quite a while, and then…
"Kyaaaaa!!"
A scream came roaring from behind a hill.
There's no mistaking it.
This is Arina's voice!
I touched the E:ID phone to take out the sword I just bought.
I tried using it as I ran, but I couldn't properly activate the command I wanted.
But I can't stop running. I don't have the time to stop!
…… This phone should have a voice command function before it was remodelled.
I pressed a button on the side, and made sure I heard the ping of the phone's alert sound, and shouted out.

“[Item]! ‘Scrap Iron Sword'”
I said out loud.

[Ready]

It was the alert voice from the time with the chocolate.
Looks like it’s working!
“Materialize! Take out! I want to Equip!”
I called out every term I could think of one by one, and then…

[Equip!]

A beam of light came out of my wristband.
The cheap sword appeared, first translucent then becoming solid.
Somehow it floated airily in front of my eyes.
Maybe it’s waiting for the owner to equip it.
I grasped it in my hand and felt its encouraging weight.

When I went over the hill I saw the worst situation unfold.
Arina was surrounded by huge dogs, three of them, and she could not run away from them.
Nevertheless, they are too big. Probably the size of lions.
So big I don’t have the confidence I can jump in and win.
Their protruding fangs showed out of their mouths, their fur stood on end giving them a gruff impression.
Rather than dogs, they’re wolves.
Perhaps becoming hungry, they howled, their bloodshot eyes turned to the prey, Arina.

[WARNING!!]

BEEEEP, the smartphone sounded an alarm tone.
[There are monsters in your vicinity. Please take caution.]
“I know that already….”
I prepared my stance with the scrap iron sword, the other hand holding a suitably-sized stone.
“Arina—!”
I raised my voice and threw the stone at the enemy.
They received no damage being thrown the stone but their killing intent now

turned to me.
“Run, what are you doing!!”
I urged her to run using that gap, but…
“Auuu, Y, Yuu-kun, help!”
Maybe she fell down, or maybe she just didn’t have enough courage, Arina did not move from her spot.
“Dammit! You’re always causing trouble!”
The fact that she’s called a ‘hero’, there must have been something wrong there, no?

—Now that it’s come to this I can only face them head on!

I raised the cheap sword overhead and jumped at the enemy.
Hoowwwwwwl!
The enemy’s fangs approached from the front.
Hesitation is defeat…!
It was a risky blow. Losing myself in the battle, I swung downward.
whack, I felt a dull pulse, the enemy took a blow in the nose.
Gya!
It whimpered, the huge wolf flinched.
Now!
“Uooooooooh!!”
I aimed at the enemy’s weak spot, thrusting my sword at its throat.
I twisted at the live flesh, feeling a disgusting sense.
The wolf groaned, *guu*, and stopped moving.
Then, right that moment the dead monster disappeared in a haze.
A jewel-like mineral fell down where the enemy’s body ‘was’.
“What?”, I was captivated for a moment, but now is not the time to investigate.
Another one was howling, jumping in to attack.
“F, ‘Fire magic’!”
Arina’s flame struck at its flank.
That’s right. That girl can use magic!
The wolf whose body was engulfed in flames lost it strength, it fell down with a thud and vanished like the one earlier.
“You should’ve used that sooner!”
“B, bbbbbbbut, p, ppppp…., please forgive me!!”

Arina started to cry.
No good, no matter how the magic she can use are, she'll be useless as a fighting potential unless she's mentally stabilized.
"It's alright already, It's going to be dangerous so step back!"
"Y, yes…. S, sorry."
"Leave that for later! Get behind my back and don't move!"
"A, all right!"
I prepared my sword, confronting the last wolf.
I faced the wolves alone earlier so I can afford to be reckless, but I've got Arina behind me now.
I can't make any risky moves now… what should I do.
"Y, Yuu-kun."
Arina spoke up from behind me.
"Mother said she put a weapon in the E:ID…. C, can you use it?"
"Ah, that."
Taking Arina's advice, I started up the smartphone.
"[Skil]…… 'Salamander Cannon'!"

[Make it to equip!] «TN: sic»

The usual light came out from the smartphone.
Before my eyes, a detailed, near-futuristic cannon like one a SF robot would use, appeared. It had a tank-like hood with a two-meter gun barrel attached to it.
The gun barrel itself looked like it could be used as a blunt weapon.
This looked like overkill to use in such a short range… but I'm not complaining.

[Ready]

Looks like preparation is OK.
I stabbed my sword onto the ground, in exchange I prepared the cannon and pointed it at the enemy.
The enemy acted immediately afterwards.
With its large body it jumped higher than my height, fangs and claws rushing at me.

"Hit 'em hard!"

[Action!!]

I fired the cannon at point-blank range.
The sound of explosion boomed and the enemy ate a scorching hot bullet.
I imagined there would be some reaction but there was almost no recoil. It felt somewhat anticlimactic.
The bullet scored a direct hit on the enemy, spilling monster guts everywhere.
Not losing its momentum, the bullet shot away to the end of the sky.
Finally the sky shook with a thunderous boom. The bullet probably exploded.
Anything that got hit by this won't stand a chance.
The monster howled, then disappeared.
The cannon, having finished its duty, likewise vanished.

"I, …. it's over."
I sat down hard on the spot.
I put the sword away, then…
"You little!! Don't go wandering around!!"
I shouted at Arina.
"I, I,m sorry. I thought about our situation and u, umm. I shouldn't be doing nothing while Yuu-kun is working hard."
"…… ah, whatever."
That's the type of thinking that makes hard work even harder.
She's always been like this.
"Uu. *sob*… Forgive me…. Arina, is always troubling Yuu-kun."
…… and in the end she'd cry.
Makes me lose the will to get angry. Seriously.
"Doesn't matter anymore. Anyway, we shouldn't stay lost here or it'll all be over. Don't go running off on your own anymore."
After having made sure Arina assented to what I told her, I examined something that was on my mind. It was the stones the monsters dropped.

I picked it up. It had a hexagonal crystalline structure, its marble-like shape had a surface that shined with various colors mixing together, iridescence, I think it's called.
"I wonder what this is."
I asked Arina what she thought but she only tilted her head, doesn't look like she has answers.
The fact that the dead body disappeared is amazing in itself.

It looks like I've got to study the difference between 'animals' and 'monsters'.
I put the stone away in the smartphone.
Several entries labeled 'Demon Core' was added to the [Items] area.

"Anyway, let's go. We have to get to the royal castle by today, right?"
"Y, yeah."
"Seems we're going to just barely make it. Can we make it, though… we should hurry."
As I said that and was about to start walking.
clop… *clop*… I heard a rhythmic sound.
The sound of horses' hooves.
When I looked towards it, I saw four top-breed white horses pulling a luxurious white coach adorned with jewels and gilded rims pulling up from the hill in the direction of Occa village.
The coachman looked at us with a face that said 'move over' so we gave them way.
This is a medieval fantasy world, so there's probably a noble or something of that kind inside.
I peeked at the window out of curiosity and caught a glimpse of a lovely girl from a gap between the curtains.
"T, that's an expensive-looking coach. I wonder if there's a princess inside."
"Looks like it."
We exchanged vague opinions and started walking once again.
"Aah, a coach must be nice. I wonder if we can ride one."
I muttered, letting out my idle complaints.
Then Arina said
"……. Yuu-kun, you wanted to ride a coach?"
"Well see, if we ride one we can get to the Royal Palace comfortably, right? Will they stop for hitchhikers, I wonder."
Of course, that was a joke, only half of it was my earnest wish.
"——……hmmm. Is that so—"
"Hm? … what is it?"
"No, it would be nice if they let us ride on the coach, right♪"
"Hey you. You're not seriously thinking of asking them to let us ride…"

"Kyaaaaaaaaaa!"

Uwaa, that was an amazing sense of déjà vu.
How I heard the screaming from behind the hills, I mean.
“Are there two of you?”
“T, there isn’t… We’ve got to hurry!!”
I started to run, moving speedily to the scene.
The coach just now was toppled on it side and the coachman was frantically soothing the horses.
Guard-looking knights jumped out from the coach, preparing their swords and starting to confront the obstacle.
I thought the opponent were giant wolves, but I was wrong.
There were four giants, drawing near as if to stop the coach’s way.
They had an unsteady gait as if they were drunk, but they were approaching the coach with certainty.
When I looked closely all four were bleeding here and there, one of them was oozing large amounts of blood from between his legs.

They looked just like the zombies from the movies.

Against the drowsily walking enemy, the knights stepped back in apprehension.
But they couldn’t run away.
A knight raised an angry voice, and gallantly jumped at the enemy.
A flash. His blade hit dug into a zombie’s shoulder, splattering body fluids everywhere.
But the zombie paid no mind, twisting its body, snatching the sword away. Then the expensive sword that can’t compare to mine was broken with both hands.
“Hiiiiiiiii!”
The now-unarmed knight screamed and started to run.
It’s not unreasonable.

“Y, Yuu-kun! We’ve got to help!”
Arina shouted out of her sense of justice.
“But, we’ve used up the special move just now.”
The smartphone indicated my MP is at 35%.
The Salamander Cannon requires 60% for energy.
I can’t use it for a while.
“You think we can win against that without the special move!?”

“I, it’s okay! This time Arina, will use magic properly! I, I’ll do my best!”
Arina curled her hand into a fist on her chest, then…
“B, but it’s scary, so i, i, if it’s alright with you I want you to cover for me.”
She wants to do rear support.
“S, sorry, even though I’m like this…. A, Arina is… … a hero!”
That’s right.
There’s no hero who’d overlook people being attacked, right.
Then her party member should do his best as well.
“But you shouldn’t go in without a plan. Swords don’t work against those guys, after all. Especially my blunt one.”
I fumbled with my smartphone and choose something usable out of [Items].
The point was to somehow give Arina an ‘opening’ from where she could use her magic.
Is there any tool that could do that…?
“Ah, Yuu-kun no, you can’t drink alcohol!”
Arina found the liquor that the old man gave me earlier and scolded me.
“I wasn’t going to drink it…. Ah, that’s right.”
I took the ‘Cheap Booze’ out of the smartphone.
“Arina. Besides fire you can also make water, right?”
“Y, Yes. I can.”
“Good.”
I also took out a ‘Towel’ and ‘Lighter’.
I jammed the towel in the bottle’s mouth.

“W, w… what are you doing?”
Arina looked in at me who started doing impromptu handicrafting.
“A molotov cocktail. We’ll stop the enemy with this.”
“Cock… tail?”
What, you don’t know…?
“No time to explain. Anyway, I’m gonna make a fire so when the enemy flinches you strike them. After that you extinguish the fire. Can you do that?”
I made sure Arina nodded and lit up the Molotov cocktail.

“Let’s go!”
Raising it overhead, we rushed towards the coach.

“Who are you!” “S, step back!”
Ignoring the remaining knights guarding the coach who were stopping us, I went past the coach and slid down, throwing the Molotov cocktail at the zombies.
The bottle exploded on the ground, the alcohol inside set ablaze, painting an arc of fire.
The fire caught on the zombies’ clothes and all four of them started to burn.
But the zombies didn’t stop moving.
They were dead to begin with so burns probably don’t scare them.
I failed, huh……!
If it’s come to this then it can’t be helped. I equipped the scrap iron sword and got ready.
“‘Lightning Magic’!”
CRASSH …… a bolt of lightning came down from the sky.
This was Arina’s cover.
The enemy who took a direct hit came tumbling down, scorched. It couldn’t move anymore.
Furthermore, the others’ situation changed.
They suddenly fell to their knees, each of them collapsing face down onto the ground.
The fire probably burned off their ankles.
But even with rotted legs, the enemy kept moving, creeping towards us with their hands.

“Get on the coach! Hurry!”

Arina ordered the knights.
The grown men got caught in her vigor and followed her orders, nodding even while confused.
Firstly, one of the knights went back to the coach.
He said “This way…” and pulled out a young girl.
The ‘princess’ from earlier.
Blonde hair and white skin, a lovely girl, she was wearing a white dress adorned with gems.
Then the coachman and the knights started pushing the coach upright.
Rather than here, I can be more helpful there.
I gave them assistance and the coach finally stood upright.

“‘Water Magic’!”
Arina chanted, extinguishing the fire, giving us a way out.
“We’re going!” “Y, Yes!”
Not that it was anyone’s decision, but we all went with the flow and got on the coach.
The horses neighed and took off at full speed.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 6 – Princess Rose's Request

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/05/30/joshiyuusha-06/

Arina has been chuckling since she got on the Coach.

Fufu, it went well.
Just as Yuu-kun wishes, we got them to give us a ride on the coach.
The dead bodies I threw away was unexpectedly useful like this.
This is the first time I used necromancy magic, but they made a good 'performance', didn't they. I should probably promote them from scum to trash.
……. I don't really know how that's different, though.

Then Arina looked up at the well-dressed girl sitting before her.

At any rate.
Why is she wearing a disguise…?

Arina thought and thought again.
How could she use this situation for the benefit of the one she loves.
Those were the only thoughts that her world revolves around.

Me and Arina, the princess and two knights.
With the five of us and the coachman on board, the coach rattled as it went forward.

"For saving us in our moment of peril, I thank you very much."

The 'princess' smiled.
Then Arina and I wholeheartedly nodded.
It wasn't because the princess had a halo shining around her face or something like that.
It was because the guarding knights made scary faces and had us at swordpoint.
Right now, we were forced to raise our hands declaring our nonresistance.
"Who are you!"
"Don't move! Do anything suspicious and we'll knock you dead!"
Aren't you two getting too carried away.
Even though you were so frightened by the zombies.

“……Y, Yuu-kun”
Arina turned to me with a face that looks like she’s about to cry.
“A, A, Arina is, nearly at the limit.”
“Calm down! You’ll be fine, they at least won’t take our lives.”
“Do you want us to throw you out!?”
“No good. Seriously calm down. Please.”
As expected from the coward, it had the opposite effect.

“Put down your swords!”
After a little while, the princess rebuked the knights.
“You’re being rude to my life’s savior.”
“That was not what we intended.”
“We have our duty to protect ojousama.”
The knights talked back.
“All right. In that case *you two* should get out of this coach.”
In this case, by ‘you two’ she wasn’t referring to me and Arina.
Anyone here could read the atmosphere.
Now that the master had said [Get out if you won’t obey me] there’s nothing they could do.
“Don’t do anything weird.”
While making threats like that, they reluctantly put their swords away.

phew
Arina and I breathed in relief.

“My guards were impolite. Please forgive me.”
The princess deeply bowed her head.
“They were only worried for my safety. Do please forgive them.”
“No, well. It’s true that we’re suspicious.”
We *are* alternate-worlders after all.
“Ummm. I wonder if we should introduce ourselves?”
As I said that, the princess made another light apology.
“I have reasons why I can’t name myself. Please forgive me.”
She can’t let anyone know she’s here, I guess.
Well, I don’t mind.
“I’m Yuuki, and this is Arina.”

Arina made a quick bow.
“Ojousama, umm…., i, if you don’t mind?”
She timidly said.
“Yes, what is it?”
“T, there’s something in ojousama’s hair since a while ago, it’s getting on my mind…. May I take it off.”
……? There’s no trash or anything in her hair, though.

Having received consent, Arina thrusted her index finger at ojousama’s hair.
“Ei!”
As soon as she did that, ojousama’s blonde hair turned pink before my eyes.
Furthermore the straight hair suddenly took on volume.
“Y, you!!” “What did you do!”
Seeing that, the two knights angrily took out their swords.
“Kyaa”, Arina shrieked as she hid behind my back.

……. Looks like she did it yet again.

“Didn’t I tell you to stop!?”
The ojousama stopped the knights with an angry voice, and so bloodshed was avoided.
“Arina-san… was it?”
“Y, yes!”
“You’re so young, and yet you can use magic. How in the world did you undo this magic?”
“I… if you ask how…. I only saw something weird and took it off.”
The ojousama and the knights looked at each other, baffled.
I have no idea what Arina is talking about, but it seems that she was saying something strange even for this world.
“This girl really did say something strange, didn’t she?”
“Ah, no, it’s not strange… it’s just…”
Ojousama patted her hair down and said,
“I had the country’s top-ranking magician change my hair color. It takes a magician of similar caliber to undo it. To have it undone by someone about my own age is…”
“Eh. Was she so amazing?”

“Learning magic, even with a master, usually takes twenty years no matter how talented one is.”
“Just where did you learn magic.”
The knights took in Arina’s abnormality one after the other.
I thought that since this is a fantasy world, magic would be more common, but….

The person in question only nervously hung on to the hem of my shirt looking as if she’s going to cry.

“To begin with, you two thought nothing being in the presence of this lady?”
…… was what they said.
Is she someone famous in this world?
Haah, the knights sighed at our bad response.
“Princess Rose. These two are abnormally impolite.”
“So it seems.”
Rose-sama put her hand on her mouth and elegantly stifled a laugh.
“It seems there’s no meaning to hide it from you. I am Rose Vosne-Romanée Grand Cru Ivan. Though I may not be up to it, but I’m the first in line for the throne of this country, and is currently in training.”
“The first…”
“…… in line, for the throne?”
We once again responded badly, and Rose-sama made a troubled face.

“Um, simply put, *I’m・the・prin・cess…* you know.”

She said in a whisper.
“Eh, seriously!? Whoa, this is the first time I’ve met a princess!”
“We caught a big one!”
“You, you’re in the presence of Rose-sama…., haah”
“……. Ahh, whatever.”
The knights were about to yell at us for being so merry, but in the end they only sulked and turned away saying, “do whatever you want.”
They seem tired of it.
“Pf… Ahahahahaha!”
Seeing that, Rose-sama could not hold any longer and laughed out loud.
“Ahh, so funny, this is the first time! The first time I told anyone I’m the ‘princess’ myself…!”

“Rose-sama…”
Astonished, the knights turned their eyes to the princess.
“What will you do, your task needs you to travel incognito.”
“We’ve let unknown persons on board and undo your disguise.”
“T… that’s right. This is something troubling, right. Not the time to be laughing, is it.”
Princess Rose cleared her throat with a cough, pulling her laughter back down her throat.
So it seems she *really* had something to do because of her position.
Being a princess is hard.

“Oi Arina, can you turn Princess Rose’s hair back into blonde?”, I asked Arina.
She replied “W, well, I’ve never done it before, so, I don’t know, I guess. I think I could do it, b, but I might not be able to.”
“Which one is it!?”
“IIIIII’m sorry! Arina is dumb so I don’t know. I, I can probably do it. But see, Arina is dumb…”
Don’t trip over your words!
“We should give it a try. Will you be willing to try using your magic once?”
Princess Rose gave us a proposal, and the knights started to say one thing and another again.
“You can’t, Princess!”
“You can’t let them cast unknown magic on you!”
“I can’t go to Marquis Iski’s residence looking like this, anyway. It’s worth a try.”
It seems that wherever she’s going she’ll be needing a disguise.
Princess Rose pushed the knights back and asked Arina for her magic.

“This was all because you carelessly undid her magic in the first place. Don’t fail.”
“P, please don’t put too much pressure on me…! One, two, —ei!”

bachi

Arina pointed with her index finger and a purple flash of lightning came out, hitting the princess in the forehead.
“Auu!”
The princess squealed, and the knights became agitated.

“I, I’m all right…. I’m just a little surprised…. —Ah”
“Hm?”
Somehow, the Princess’ eyes met mine.
“W, what is it?”
“Ah… no”
Princess Rose stared at me for quite some time.
“Um…. Your name—Yuuki-san, was it?”
“Yes. T, that’s right.”
“It’s a lovely name,” she smiled.
Not good. She’s amazingly cute.
No no no no no, not that, what the hell.
I mean, it’s troubling if you suddenly make a face like that.
“R, rather than that, your hair! Oi Arina! It’s not changed yet!”
I yelled at Arina to hide my trembling.
“S, so so so, sorry! I, it’s not this one…. I, I’ll try one more time… ei!”
Arina tried again.
poof, for just an instant steam-like smoke rose from Princess Rose’s head, her hair changed into the blonde straight hair we first saw her with.

It was a success.

phew
“I’m relieved…”
The knights breathed a sigh of relief.
I didn’t like these two in the beginning, but it seems they had their share of troubles.
I’m starting to pity them a little.
“Shouldn’t it be fine already. Before anything else happens please step off the coach.”
One of the knights said so, and…
“Ah. —Not a word of what happened today to anyone, okay?”
They asked for my silence.
Well, it’s not like this coach was headed for the royal castle, and like they said, before Arina does something again it might be better for us to step off.
That was what I judged.

“No. I will not have you do such a thing.”
Immediately Princess Rose said something like that.
“Yuuki-san…. no, both of you, I want you two to come along with me.”
Seeing their master’s recklessness, the knights were awed and only hung their heads.
“I had the good luck to meet someone so skillful at wielding magic, this can be nothing other than divine providence. Don’t you think it’ll be more reassuring to have them with us?”
“But you see…”
“We don’t know who they are, and how are we going to explain them to Marquis Iski?”
“We’ll do something about that. … let’s see, how about we say Arina is the maid and Yuuki-san is my personal attendant?”
“A lady having a man for a personal attendant? No matter how you look at it he’s a sponger paramour…. oof, excuse me.”
“Anyway, it won’t look good in the eyes of the public.”
“It’s just something to falsify his status. Not something to be worried about.”
“Um—….”
Somehow the conversation proceeded on its own, so I raised my hand to interrupt.
“I’m sorry to interrupt your discussion, but we need to be in Ivan castle by today, so…”
“Why is that?”
“If you ask me why, well…”
……., why is it again?
We originally planned to arrive at Ivan castle but got the coordinates wrong, but if you put it that way that’s no reason for me to head to the castle.
“Oi, Arina”
I asked Arina for backup but there’s no way we’re going to get a good answer out of her.
“Uu, I’m sorry… It’s because mother told me to do so.”
See.
“Then there’s no problem, right.”
“Well, it’s just that we don’t know whether there will be a problem…”

“—Please!”
The princess leaned forward and gripped both my hands with hers.
“I need your help.”
Uwaa, Uwaaaaah….
Those teary eyes drawing you in. That fragile voice asking for help.
Also, our relative positioning is bad.
I could see a valley peeking out of the chest of her dress.
Using her fingers, she gripped my hands tighter.
Being petitioned in a situation like this, there’s no way I could run.
“A……Arina”
For now, I asked the ‘Hero’-sama for her opinion.
“I, if Yuu-kun wants to, then Arina will come along wherever you go.”
“—It’s decided then. Fufu♪”
In a good mood, Princess let go of my hand.
“Things had gotten a little more enjoyable.”
“Arina too, somehow feel that it’s going to be fun.”
Arina turned towards me and smiled.
“Right, Yuu-kun?”

For reasons I don’t understand, I who had only been carried by the flow can only give a vague nod.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 7 – How Things are Done in the Isky House

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/06/19/joshiyuusha-07/

Several hours had passed since we were forcibly compelled to come along with the princess.
The carriage rattled as it proceeded through the dark forest.

“We will be there soon.
Princess Rosé said so with a stern face while she was checking her hair.
The carriage stopped after several minutes, just as she announced.
“Yuuki-san, Arina-san…, please take care of me.”
We nodded.

“Welcome!”

A person from the residence welcomed us as he opened the coach door.
First the guardian knights, then the princess, then the two of us followed them out of the coach.

I looked up at the Isky estate. It was a huge, dark and evil-looking mansion.
The grounds were fenced by tall trees so even though the weather was nice, almost no sunlight made it through.
The mansion itself looked like it had a shadow cast over it.
caw, *caw*, some crows cawed, making the mysterious air even stronger.
“I, it looks like a haunted house…”
Arina said so while trembling behind me.
I was thinking the exact same thing.
I hope the silhouette standing at the window looking at us is not ‘something we’re not supposed to see’.

The order of events is a little backwards, but let’s go a few hours back.
I was asking about our purpose and plans about going to face Marquis Isky.

“Suspected traitor?”
I repeated the words and the knights nodded.
“As you know, there had been long-standing tensions between our country and Cidre.”

“There were rumors that Marquis Isky, whose territory borders Cidre, had been introducing spies.”

Well this is troubling.
Even if you tell me about this world’s situation, it’s all gibberish to me.

“In short, our country and the neighboring country are on bad terms. Then, we suspect that Marquis Isky is letting spies into the country.”
Princess Rosé broke it down for me and explained.

“Hmm…. So Princess is going to inspect him then.”
“I can’t do that, which is why I’m using a disguise. If they knew I was coming they’d hide the evidence, right.”
“Well, yeah, but couldn’t you ask someone else?”
“That’s obvious, good grief.”
Haah, the knights let out a sigh.
“The reason why Princess Rosé has to do a direct inspection, and hide her own status at that.”
“If only it wasn’t Marquis Isky…. This is most troubling.”
It looks like there are some complicated circumstances, I have no idea what they’re saying.
Then the princess said something shocking.

“That’s because Marquis Isky’s son, Lord Glenn is my fiancé. I have a clear relationship with Lord Glen.”
Then she nonchalantly added.
“In a rather political way.”

Uwaah—.
Looks like she dislikes him quite a bit.
“Princess Rosé, please tone it down…..”
“Your attitude is showing.”
“Oh my, I’m not princess Rosé. I’m a relative who looks just like her, Demy Champagne Blanc de Blancs Merry. I have no relation to Lord Glenn.”
I see, so that’s the story they’re going with.
“Well, grudges aside, why does Princess Rosé or Lady Demy have to inspect that fiancé?”
“Who do you think hates Lord Glenn the most in this country?”

Lady Demy, formerly Princess Rosé, said this with a composed expression.
I already got the gist of it.
“That’s right, it’s me. If *I* couldn’t find an evidence of his rebellion, then there’s no choice but to declare them innocent. That’s the rough of it.”
Looks like ya got some grudge there.
Really frightening, this princess.

“If Princess Rosé says so then… I’m afraid to say, but she was emphatically ordered by her esteemed Father, His Majesty the King. She was half-forced into it.”
“If His Majesty sent someone from the Bureau of Investigation to Marquis Isky’s house, he will lose the trust of the border Lords.”
“If he couldn’t trust his own relatives, then of course he will lose unifying power. That said, now that the neighboring countries could start a war at any moment, he needs to quickly verify any rumors. Those are the circumstances.”
The knights supplemented the princess’ emotional reasoning with some internal affairs.
“Well, I don’t quite get the difficult parts, but I understand somehow. Anyway, you need to find evidence whether this Marquis Isky is a traitor or not, right.”
As I finished with that princess Rosé slowly nodded in affirmation.
“Do you have any concrete plans?”

“I want you two to get in touch with the people at the Isky House using your statuses as attendant and maid. … I don’t care how trifling, I want you to collect rumors and testimonies. Servants should be more loose-lipped than the Marquis’ own family.

I see.
In other words we have to get friendly with the employees and gather rumors.
“As I said before, my name is Demy, the third daughter of a relative of the Ivan Royal Family, Archduke Merry, making her debut in high society by going around to each and every noble’s house. I ask that you treat me as such.”
“Well you can dodge anything difficult by saying ‘I’m only an underling, I don’t understand’.”
“Don’t say anything strange that will get us found out, okay?”
The knight reminded me, and I hesitantly nodded.

“U, umm….”
Hero-sama who’s been silently listening without saying anything timidly raised her hand all of a sudden.
“I, I, I can’t do something like p, pretending to be a m, maid!”
… and started saying something like that.
“We’ll just say that Lady Demy employed a country girl she found on the way. That way you won’t be out of place even if your manners are bad.”
“It’s not a rare thing to employ a servant along the way, after all. Well, train yourself as a newbie maid as much as possible.”
A~h, she’s going to cry.
Looking at her makes me worried.

“Welcome, Demy-sama! You must be tired after your long journey.”
A man who looked like a butler, who opened the door, held lady Demy’s hand in greeting.
A bald patch on the top of his head and a long nose featured prominently on him.
“I believe this is the first time we’ve met. My name is Tris, I’ve had the honor to be working here in the Isky house. Should you need anything during your stay here please don’t hesitate to call on me.”
“My regards, Tris.” answered lady Demy.
“Come, Yuuki, Arina. Bring my luggage, will you.”
I believe the term ‘Ojousama’ applies to all kinds of characters, but it looks like Lady Demy is one of the high-handed ones.
They probably made her a spoiled child for being the youngest.
“Well, uh, I’ve heard people say that you looked like Princess Rosé, but, well, how should I say, you’re even more—”

“I’m way more cute… right?”

“Huh?”
He probably wanted to say “You’re even more alike”.
Pushing it even further, Lady Demy said,
“*I said*, I’m way more cute than Princess Rosé, right?”
Because she said so butler-san became stiff.

Being called ‘beautiful, just like the princess’ is compliment enough already,

but to say that you're cuter than her on top of that, just how cheeky are you, young lady. —was probably what he thought.
"What's wrong?"
"N, no—ha ha ha. Yes, truly, compared to Princess Rosé who is said to be as lovely as a bouquet of flowers, you, young lady, are as beautiful as if another flower were added onto that. I, Tris, had my eye captivated for a moment."
Ooh—, as expected from a butler. He nicely dodged it.
"Then stop comparing me with that girl each and every time … it's really getting on my nerves."
Lady Demy went onwards, looking irritated.
Behind us who were following behind her, Tris bellowed an apology: "P, pardon my insolence!"

"What's this, does Lady Demy hate Princess Rosé?"
As I was carrying the luggage I stealthily asked Lady Demy.
"I wanted to show them I'm not on Rosé's side, and also, if you're always being compared everywhere you go you'd get sick of it, right."
Aah—.
You sure thought this through.
"But what you did just now was a little…"
"Probably only Princess Rosé herself in this whole country could say that."
The knight added to our secret talk, pointing out her overdoing things.
Then Lady Demy puffed her cheeks a little.
"In times like this showing you're an ally a bit unnaturally is just the right thing to do!"
She said that and sulked.
"B, but, now that she said that at the start, we can expect comparisons between Princess Rosé and Lady Demy becoming forbidden, so it's a good protection from getting found out, right. I think it's a good strategy."
Hearing Arina say that all of a sudden really caught me by surprise.
"……. You know, you do say something clever every once in a while. What's going on inside your head?"
"Eh, rrr, really? S, ss, sorry, Arina, said something smart even though I'm dumb, huh?"
Ah—, good, she's normal.

It's actually a relief that she said something ambiguous.

Tris, who was drenched in cold sweat, caught up with us, so the secret talk had to be suspended.
With the butler's guidance, we went through the residence gardens and finally arrived at the front door.
There were ten-odd maids on the stairs in front of the residence lined up to the left and right to greet us.
The three people standing in front of the door must be Marquis Isky's family.

"Welcome to the Isky residence, Lady Demy!!"

Once we were at a reasonable distance the maids greeted us in unison.
In response, Lady Demy raised the hems of her skirts slightly and bowed elegantly like she would when inviting one for a dance.
"I am Demy Champagne Blanc de Blancs Merry, the third daughter of the Merry house. For three days from today I shall be in your care.", she greeted them.
"Well well, the journey must have been rough on you."
As he greeted her with a smile, the man in the middle came down the stairs.
He had an angular face, a beard, and was wearing a military uniform with medals pinned on it.
He was perhaps in his 40s.
He gave off an intimidating feeling despite his smile.
"I believe this is the first time we've met. My name is Malto Macallan Isky. I've had the honor of being granted the title of 'Marquis' by His Highness The King. I am greatly indebted to the young lady's esteemed father."
Lord Malto offered his hand and Lady Demy took it in a handshake.

Then the other two followed down the stairs.
"I will now introduce you. This is my wife, Welsh."
Lady Welsh gave a bow in greeting.
She was wearing a strapless dress and large earrings.
She hid it under lipstick and face powder, but she was a lady with considerable age.
……. How should I say this, she's the very image of a 'Wicked Stepmother' out of a Grimm Fairy Tale, an old lady who gives off a bad feeling.
"I take it you know of my son Glenn?"

As the Princess' fiancé, there's probably no noble who don't know of him.
The introduction had a nuance like that.
"Yes. I have heard of him."
"We were fortunate to have his marriage with Her Highness the Princess decided."
twitch… Lady Demy's eyebrows reacted.
I know how you feel, but please don't reveal it so openly…….
"Good day, I'm Glen Irish Isky."
He had a physique like his father and neat blonde hair.
He was wearing a brand new military uniform with few decorations.
"Well, I wouldn't have imagined I would meet such a beautiful young lady. Pleased to make your acquaintance."
His intonation was overflowing with self-confidence, as if he would announce 'I'm handsome!' at any moment.
With that unpleasant airhead for a fiancé, I understand how the princess would hate him.
"Please accept our hospitality to the fullest and rest your travel fatigue."
Finally, Lord Malto closed the conversation with that and ended their introductions.

Well, let's intrude on the residence.
As the mood became like that Lord Malto suddenly raised his hand.
Immediately the butlers nodded and stood in the way of the knights.
"Well then Sir Knights, you've done well. Please allow our Isky house to take responsibility for your dear Lady and look after her."
"Wha……" "What did you say!?"
The knights were shaken.
"Are you saying you're turning us away at the gates!?"
"That cannot be, oh no no you must've misheard. Our Isky house is a military family. Saying that we would go so far as not appreciate the guards' efforts is…"
"Even us humble knights have heard of Marquis Isky's' exploits. We do not doubt in his power even in the slightest."
"But this and that are different matters! We were ordered by the Archduke to not let any harm come to our Lady. We couldn't possibly return so casually!"
"Ha ha ha. I wonder what kind of thing do you mean by 'harm' in this Isky

residence?”
“Nuu. B, but! We can’t face the Archduke…”
At the end of the quarrel, Tris said the words that became the finishing blow.

“Surely you do not doubt us, the Isky house, who have marriage ties with the princess?”

Uwaaa….h!
He said the name!
Both Malto and Glenn just indifferently let him say that. This means what the butler said was as good as having come from the master.
Even I who is unfamiliar with this world understand that much.
“Y…. you!”
At the mention of their master’s true name, the knights’ faces turned red.
People really have blood vessels stand out when they’re angry, huh. The two were trembling throughout their bodies, and they were just about to draw their swords.

“You two. Watch your mouths.”

Lady Demy interjected.
“You’re in the presence of Marquis Isky. Stop being so obstinate.”
“But… m’lady.”
“I’m telling you to stand down. You want me to lose face even before my début?”
“……~~~~tch!”
The knights gritted their teeth, making an audible noise, then took a deep breath.
They turned towards Tris and bowed deeply.
“We’re sorry to have been so rude.”
“We humbly apologize.”

The two understood.
The one who is angry, who had the right to be angry was Princess Rosé.
But she endured it for the sake of her goal.
The knights couldn’t possibly ruin all that.

“…… Yuuki, Arina. We’d like to say a few things, please.”

“It’s okay afterwards, just come.”
I nodded.
“Well then, we’ll be leaving our Lady to you.”
“Please excuse us with this.”
With heavy voices, the two mechanically gave their farewell greetings and turned towards the coach.
“No no, such vigorous gentlemen, you have been very reliable.”
Tris, turning towards their retreating figures, launched sarcastic remarks.

“….. Well then. That missy over there, is she a maid?” said Tris, turning around to face us who were left behind.
“Y, yes!”
Arina froze up in surprise.
“Yes, that’s right. I’ve taken a liking to her and picked her up on the way.”
Lady Demy introduced Arina just as planned.
“She’s cute, right?”
“Hahaa, but she seems to still be lacking in regards to real work.”
“That’s true. So, I want to have her trained here.”
“I see. Please leave it to us. ….hm, by the way, how about that lad over there? We thought he was an apprentice knight when we saw him, but that doesn’t look to be the case?”

“He’s my attendant.”

The moment Lady Demy said so, the people around her stirred up a commotion.
“He’ll be looking after my personal ‘needs’ so don’t mind him.”
Lady Demy added, not minding the others’ reactions.
“Ha, a, an attendant, is he? Well, a young lady having a male attendant…”
“Oh my, is it strange? Nobody ever told me there was anything wrong with it, though?”
“W, well, that’s true.”
Lady Demy turned a deep smile towards Tris, who was drenched in cold sweat.
“I also picked him up along the way. He’s cute, right?”
It looks like I’m really going to be her ~~paramour~~ pet….
“ahhahhahha!”

Immediately, Lord Malto laughed so loud his chest heaved.
“You’re a really unusual young lady. I’ve taken a liking to you.”
Then he clapped his hands.
“Now, what are you all doing! Show Lady Demy some hospitality!”
With that the servants started moving again.
“…….Looks like we couldn’t keep up the act in front of you, huh. We’ve been outclassed, to say the least. Ha ha ha ha ha!”
Malto, seemingly pleased by Lady Demy, brought her inside the residence while laughing uproariously.
They went inside, and Arina and I, and also Tris were left outside the house.
I thought that I should at least see the knights off.
As I was thinking that Tris said, “… you, umm, how should I say. Is there any chance, you and the Archduke’s daughter…”
—just what’s he trying to say.
Well, I understood some way or another.
Anyhow, I should play along with Lady Demy’s ruse.
“You know, Lady Demy. She’s got a mole under her breast.”
“Gaah—!”
He went ‘gaah’ from the shock.
Look at you.

“Curse you, curse you Isky…!”
“How dare you take the princess’ name in vain!”
Back at the coach, the knights unleashed their anger, taking out their swords and swinging it at the sky.
“They definitely seem used to doing it. They must be doing other things besides!”
“Damn them! They’re humiliating the princess even before she’s married!”
“Not satisfied! No matter how many times I curse them I’m not satisfied!!”
“……Y, you seem to be really angry, knight-san…”
Arina hid behind me in fear.
“Well of course we’re angry.”

“…… gasp! Y, y y, you two…”
After a little while the knights noticed our presence.
“Sorry. We showed you a disgraceful sight.”

“We couldn’t control our temper. We still lack training…”
“Nah…., it’s obvious you’d get angry.”
I said so, and the knights shook their heads.
“But Princess Rosé could put up with it.”
“Compared to us she did it splendidly.”
I do think she certainly put up with it really well.
You usually wouldn’t endure your hated fiancé using your name willy-nilly like that.
She could’ve blown her cover and flew into a rage right then and there.

“But I think she could hold her ground because she got mad at you two.”

That was what I said.
She calmed down precisely because she got angry at someone else. I think that played a part in it.
“So, probably, her anger at you wasn’t for nothing.”
“….” “….”
The two pondered with faces full of melancholy.
“Now that you’ve said so, we feel relieved.”
The knight took his sword out, scabbard and all, and pushed it onto me.
“Use this. You can hide it in your luggage.”
“If somebody found out you can get out of it saying we made you carry it.”
Well, I do have the E:ID phone so there’s no need to be worried.
I gratefully took the sword.
“——Be careful. I heard the Isky residence keeps monsters in their basement.”
The knight gave me a warning.
“K, keeping monsters?”
“Well, this is no more than rumor, but…. seeing how they behaved I’m sure they must be hiding something.”
“They must be aiming for something by driving us away, just thinking of it terrifies me. I’m worried for the Princess.”
“Yeah. We’ll protect Rosé.”
The knights held out their hands.
A handshake.

“The princess picking two unknown persons like you up was probably out of a

royalty's capability of judgement. Most of all, it is great that you two were the ones accompanying her."
"We cannot protect the princess. I've never dreamed that I'd say those words someday…"

""——We're leaving the rest to you.""
I slowly nodded."

"…….Yuu-kun, are you angry?"
Arina asked me as we watched the back of the leaving coach.
"……"
I don't know.
I only just met the Princess a while ago, I don't know the least bit about her.
But, somehow.
In this short time I probably felt familiarity with the person called Rosé.
The knights also loved the princess as well.
Not just as their master, but because of her personal character.
So I became angry like this.
I'm angry at the name of 'The Princess' being used as a figurehead.
They're disregarding Princess Rosé's character.
Her figure, heading straight for her duty despite being not so different to me in age.
Even her figure when she forgot her duties as a Princess and showed her girly side.
I'm sure even her figure that I haven't seen.
Everything. Everything is disregarded and used in the name of 'fiancée'.

Ah. That's why I feel disgusted.

"….——I'm, angry as well."

Then Arina said this.

"I see. Then Arina is angry too." «TN: shiver»

"Let's uncover their evil deeds and get the marriage cancelled."
"Yeah! Let's do our best!"

Rosé who is going to succeed the kingdom, or the Isky house who sit in their seats watching, waiting for the opportunity to overturn the kingdom, neither of

them matter in the least.
Let live the side who will be useful to Yuu-kun, and destroy the other.
That was the plan.

——But, they've made a big mistake.

By their foolish acts the Isky house provoked his anger.
Despite being trash, they dared injure the sublime Yuu-kun's heart.
Arina looked up at the gloomy residence and grinned.

That's right, she's decided which side will be destroyed.

⇐ *Previous* | *TOC* | *Next* ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 8 – Gossip Times

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/06/22/joshiyuusha-08/

We went back towards the residence and picked up ojousama's luggage we left with Tris.
The three of us went up the stairs and into the entrance hall.

The interior is luxurious, almost as if we just entered a high-class hotel, the spacious hall was decorated with chandeliers, elaborately patterned carpet, and the walls are lined with vases, statues of naked women, and heavily framed landscape art. Above all, this residence has a huge gap between its interior and exterior design.

"Well then, Arina-san should go this way."
While we were being splendidly stupefied, Tris called for Arina.
"I will have you work together with our maids from today for as long as you're staying here. We will treat you the same as the other maids."
"Y… yes! P, p, please take care of me!"
Since it's *her* I thought she'd start crying and say something stubborn but she unexpectedly replied with a proactive response.
"…. will you be all right?"
I said to her in a somewhat worried voice, but Arina firmly said, even with her face pale,
"I promised Yuu-kun I'll do my best."
"All right. But don't push yourself too much. If anything happens run to me or ojousama immediately."
"Y, yes. I'll do that."

"—shall we get a move on now?"
Seeing Tris becoming impatient, Arina went to him.
"Oi, you, you're free right."
Tris then called one of the maids.
"Take Yuuki-dono to Demy-ojousama's guest room. It's the innermost guest room, got it?"
"Yes, Tris-sama."

“All right. …. well then Yuuki-dono, I will call you when it’s time to eat.”
I shouldered the luggage and nodded.
Following the guide maid, I went up a flight of stairs.
“Ah, right. —please don’t be too overt, I sincerely beg you of this.”
Tris said so as he went away.
Don’t flirt too much, was probably what he meant.
Since it’s all an act it’s not like I can really flirt with her.

“This way please.”
Maid-san guided me towards the guest room.
The corridors were also pretty wide.
I lived in a 1DK dorm room, which probably will fit snugly here.
There’s windows on my right hand side and furnishings on the other wall.
It’s like a miniature art gallery.
At the room at the end of that art gallery, Maid-san stood to a stop.
“This is ojousama’s room.”
After giving me a short introduction, she spun round and grasped a fixture that looked like a gigantic carabiner attached to the door. The door knocker, if I’m not wrong.
Then she knocked, *knock knock*.
[Who is it?]
Lady Demy responded from inside.

“Your attendant Yuuki-sama is here.”
[Bring him in.]
“Excuse me.”

click, Maid-san opened the door.
“Please,” she said as she bowed.
I went in.
“Excuse me,” Maid-san gave a deep bow and closed the door.

…… this royal treatment kind of makes me nervous. I can’t calm down at all.

“Aren’t you a little too tense?”
Lady Demy, sitting on the king-size canopy bed, saw me being uncomfortable, and heartily laughed.
“Haah…. I can’t get used to residences like this.”

As I said that, she laughed again.
The room is about 20 tatami in size.
More cramped than I thought.
There was an antique-looking dresser garnished with a flower, and in the center of the room there was a round table with four seats.
The expression ‘antique-looking’ had felt strange ever since I came here.
Anyway, since quite some furniture had been laid down, the room already had a “lived-in” feel.

“What should I do with the luggage?”
Since I had the title of ‘attendant’ for now, I should do my job.
“Just put them somewhere, come here.”
She requested me to do my other ‘job’.
…… Hmm, does she really need to use me that far.
Let’s just do what she says for now.
I headed for the bed and sat down a bit of a distance from her.
But Lady Demy quickly closed that gap. Then for some reason she rested her head on my chest and leaned her weight on me.

Seriously?
Princess, this is going to make me misunderstand.

In confusion, I stayed there in silence.
“…… what’s wrong?” she said as she looked at me with upturned eyes.
That look in her eyes, it’s almost as if she was saying:

‘Be gentle with me, like always☆’

Is that assumption just a DT virgin’s wild delusion?
“T, that geezer Tris said not to lose our restraint too much.”
“Nonsense. Just ignore that stuck-up guy.”
She completely turned into an ero-ojousama.
I can’t, I can’t tell how far I’m allowed to go anymore!
(*Hold it! Do we really need to go this far!?*)
I whispered a protest.
She’s asking me for more acting than what a DT cherry can perform.
Then Princess raised her index finger and gestured, *shhhh!*
(*The maid is listening in from behind the door. Let’s give them a little something*

to gossip about.)

Ah.

Haah….

I see, it's something like that.

I can understand somewhat, on the other hand the overly refreshing feeling made me dissatisfied, or maybe I should say slightly disappointed.
"Hey, stroke my hair like you always do."
For a moment she switched into Princess Rosé but immediately went back to Lady Demy and made her demand.
"…… or should I throw you back out to the streets?"
Lady Demy has a sadistic disposition, huh.
Well it's an act, after all, so if I stay confused here it'll be my offense.
Let's make a counterattack.

Umm, ahem.

"I don't mind being thrown back out into the streets, but…"
I said as I hugged Lady Demy's shoulders and pulled her in.
Disregarding the little yelp she made, I looked into her eyes.
"Won't you be the one having it hard then?"
"……"
Lady Demy looked into my eyes with an astonished look in her face.

Fuhahahaa, she's surprised, she's surprised.
She wouldn't have imagined I'd strike back.

She was dumbfounded for a little while.
"W…… what's that, you cheeky. Even though you can't live without me."
"You can't go on living without me, either, right?"

Ah, was that too pretentious just now?
Well, Princess Rosé herself said it's all right to be a little theatrical, after all.

"~~~~~……!"
Her face turned red as she looked away.
They say women are full of disguises, but it's amazing how they could be this cute even when it's just an act.

“No, as I thought, you better go.”
“Are you sure?”
“Y, yeah, that’s right. An insolent uncivilized bumpkin like you, you’re fired!”

Ah, this is *that*, right.
I think this can be called a ‘tsundere’ in terms of our world.

“Is that so? Well that’s too bad.”
I pushed her aside and stood up.

“Ah……”
Immediately, Lady Demy raised a regretful voice.
I guess I should make one more push.
“I’ll be a little lonely, but since I’m your ‘attendant’, I’ve got no choice. I’ll do as you ordered. It’s been my pride to wake up to a high-class woman like you every morning. —though from today onwards it’s going to be just a memory.”

Ooh. That was a nice line just now.
I’m proud of myself.
I can’t say this unless my partner’s ‘setting’ is someone who’s madly in love with me, though.

“Ah, W, …… wait!”
Lady Demy became impatient and held me back.
“Yeah, all right, I’ll wait.”
“T, that’s not what I mean!?”
“‘That’s not what I mean’, I don’t know what kind of order that is. I’m uncivilized, after all.”
“Uuu…. e, err.. umm.”
Lady Demy disregarded her own dignity and looked for the words to say to me.
Then—
“You understand, right! Don’t go, I don’t want you to go! I, I, I want you to stay with me!”
She finally broke.
Casting away her decorum, she became a girl seeking companionship with all her heart.

—The servant wears the pants in the love relationship with the high-handed

lady….
Yeah.
This would be good to spread in the gossip network, wouldn't it?

"Can't be helped. Since the Archduke's daughter says so, the commoner has to obey. —But you know, from here onwards…"
As I was saying that I stood up pretending to leave and opened the door.

"Hyaa!"

The maid who guided me here flopped down to the floor.
As Princess Rosé said, she was clinging to the door listening attentively to our soap opera act.
"—I'd like to continue *without* an audience."
I maliciously said to Maid-san.
Maid-san stood back up with a pale face and frantically said.
"I, I heard nothing! I saw nothing!"
"Seems so. What to do, ojousama?"
"……. Never do anything like this again. Got it?"
"Y, yyyyyyyyyyess! Eeee, excuse meeeeee!!"
Maid-san ran away screaming.

"Right, now nobody should be coming here."
I closed the door, feeling accomplished.
"How was it!? Wasn't that a perfect gigolo-like act I did!?"
I put my thumb up, asking for Princess' opinion.
Immediately she buried her face in a pillow with a bang.
"Yuuki-san……"
"Hm?"
"…… went too far."
Like that, she groaned 'uu– uu–' and won't come out.

Ummm.

……. now what should I do?

"Now where should I begin then."
Inside the linen room, Arina murmured as she was putting on the maid clothes she was given.

Turning the Isky pigs into a bloodbath is easy.
But that can't do.
Unless I settle this problem for Princess Rosé in a way the country can consent to, it's going to be troubling later on.

In that case, finding evidence of rebellion is certainly the most direct method.
Can't be helped.
I guess should stay quiet a little while longer….

After she was done changing she left the linen room and went to the kitchen.
In the kitchen the 'senpais' came out and greeted her.
"I, I will be working hard from today, my name is Arina! P, p …. please take care of me!"
It was met with applause from everyone.

…… *That's weird*, thought Arina, tilting her head.
The maids here are all young girls.
Since it's not an Akihabara maid café, there should usually be a middle-aged head maid doing the managing.

"Now, should we first begin with your first job?" one of the senpais said.
She started with the management, is she the head maid? "Yes, …… I'll do my best in anything!"
Arina showed her enthusiasm.
She smiled as she nodded and brought Arina outside the kitchen.
"Umm…. outside?"
"Yes. There's some work that a newcomer absolutely has got to do."

—There's definitely something here. Her instincts say so but for now, Arina played dumb and went along.
'Outside' is at the back of the kitchen where the vegetables and grains are kept.
She opened a four-sided container-like basket with a lid that was put there.

What she took out was a chicken with its legs bound.

It was a still clucking, live chicken.
"Finish it," Senpai-maid said with a smile as she thrusted the chicken at her.

I see.
I'm getting the dirty job.

Though maids do lots of things, there should also be the workers.

“U, um…, things like this, doesn’t the seller-san usually do it…”
“What are you saying? Then it won’t be as fresh, right? You want to give the masters and the guests spoiled food to eat?”
“T, that’s … but”
“You’ve never done this at home?”
“Y, yes…. Usually father would do something like this.”
“Really? But things are different here.”
Laughter can be heard coming from the kitchen.
They seem to be having fun seeing the newbie confused.
This always happens when trash gathers.
Aah.
Damn trash that can’t do anything if not in a group.
I want to make them all lick Yuu-kun’s shoes.
Though I can do it right away if I don’t have any other objectives… well, can’t be helped.

“Uu…. All right.”
Arina timidly took the chicken.

“Um. … I, I’ve never done this before. I don’t know how I’m supposed to do this.”
“Don’t act spoiled. There’s a knife there right? Then you just cut the ve…”

“Like this?”

Arina held the chicken by the head and pulled with all her strength.
Splat. The spine gave way, and a red splatter was drawn on the senpai’s clothes.
“Eek,” she froze in fear, but it’s not over yet.
fwoosh, blood sprayed out like a geyser from the body that hadn’t been drained of blood.

Whether it was or wasn’t a culture of butchering meat, there shouldn’t be many girls who’d still be composed after being drenched in blood.

“Kyaaaaaaaaa!!”
She’s not an exception, she screamed. «TN: Haze at the abyss, and the abyss hazes back at you»

The other maids would probably come running.
But that wouldn't be fun. Arina used magic to close the kitchen back door and seal it shut with a stick.
"Y, y, you! Something's wrong with you! You're not normal!"
"Huh, did I get it wrong? I've never done this before."
Arina played dumb and picked up another chicken.
"I'll do it better this time."
"Enough, you, enough already!"
"Eh, um… but I want to quickly stand on my own like everyone!"
"No, stop, let the chicken go….!"
She wanted to stop her but she lost strength in her legs and couldn't move.
Pretending not to hear that senpai's pleas, Arina once again pulled on the chicken's head.

Fresh blood rained down on her once again.
"Hiii——……"
The shock went over her limit, and she fainted with a flop.

So easy.

Arina released the kitchen door and the other maids came rushing out.
Of course, they all asked her what was going on here.
"I'm sorry. I was too clumsy with the knifework I frightened senpai."
Arina gave a plausible excuse.
"…… can I have some fresh maid clothes for now?" she said as she unfastened the red-stained apron.

⇐ *Previous* | *TOC* | *Next* ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 9 – The Madam's Scheme

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/07/01/joshiyuusha-09/

The guest rooms are located on the left hand side from the front of the Isky residence, but the rooms where the masters of the house lived was on the opposite, right hand side.

Lady Welsh's room was located far deeper inside than the guest rooms, and it was decorated with luxurious ornaments inlaid with pretty gemstones.

It is widely regarded that everything should have its limits, but the stones that decorate her bed knows no restraint, as if her own unscrupulousness was put on display.

The owner of that room that went past its limits did nothing to conceal her irritation, and said thus:
"I can't stand her."
Then she summoned the maid attending her by her side.
"What's the deal with that little girl! So irritating!!"
Then without any notice she slapped the maid on the cheek.
The young maid didn't even flinch and silently took it with her face.
It seems she had already gotten plenty used to this kind of cruel treatment.

"Even though she's a relative of the royal family, now that Glenn is going to marry the princess, we're equal… no, we're higher ranked than archduke Merry. That girl just doesn't understand that!"

whack! she gave another swing with her hand.

"Seriously. You think so too, right?"
Then of all things, she asked the one she was venting her anger on for agreement.
"…… yes. It's just as Lady Welsh says."
"That's right, isn't it? I'm obviously in the right."
The lady nodded then turned towards the maid.
"…… your face looks terrible. Don't show that unsightly face in front of the guests until it heals. They're still our important guests, after all."

At that unreasonable order, the maid answered “Understood”, without so much as twitching an eyebrow.
“….. you may go now.”
The maid who had just been released bowed politely without showing her happy face and left the room.

“What an unsociable girl, gives me the creeps.”

That was the appraisal of the Lady toward the persevering maid.
Somehow it seems the Lady had totally lost the ability to objectively see her own violent acts.
Then what’s more, her pride, like this room’s splendor, seems to know no bounds.

She started thinking about making the guest she couldn’t stand, namely Lady Demy, go through a painful experience.

Then a few minutes afterwards, she smiled.
“…… That’s right, I’ve got a good idea”
She took out a summoning bell from her dresser and struck it two, three times.
But no sound was heard.
Of course.
This is a bell that was worked and imbued with magic so that other people can’t hear the sound.
In almost all cases in this world, this kind of bell is used for the summoning of ‘assassins’.
[…… you called for me?]
Not even a moment later, a male voice was heard in the room, but his form can’t be seen.
The Lady paid no mind to such things.

“Lady Demy had an attendant with her, and she brazenly brought a man at that. But I think that lover of hers is soon going to run into an ‘accident’ and lose his life, don’t you?”
[Understood.]
The man gave his immediate reply to the roundabout order.

“fufufu…. Little girl, you should learn your lesson.”

The Lady scoffed at Lady Demy.

…… but she, or even her pet assassin, would never have imagined that there was a ‘newbie’ maid on the room’s terrace concealing her breathing.

After almost a minute groaning ‘uu– aa–’ on the pillow, Lady Demy fell silent, and after a slight delay, abruptly sat upright.
Then she sat on the edge of the bed as if nothing had happened and calmly said,
“Excuse me. I lost composure for a little bit there.”
“It’s amazing how you have that on/off gap.”
“It *is* my job to keep up appearances. Royalty don’t act like commoners.”
“But I *really* like the disheveled-Princess-Rosé character.”
As I said that, Lady Demy turned around and buried her face in the pillow again.
“Go easy on me! Yuuki-san, go easy on me!! I’m dying here!”
“What was that reaction about!? Did I really say something *that* weird!?”
In response to my objection, the princess took a short pause and sat back upright, combing down her messy hair with her fingers.

“…… people say Princess Rosé is beautiful like a bouquet of flowers, a pure and chaste maiden.”

She started telling a story as if it was about somebody else.
“Yes, that was of course exaggerated and embellished for publicity. Because of her pedigree she received strict training to be like that but her actual personality doesn’t change. Since childhood, her tendency for pranks and mischief had been very embarassing.”

“Umm–, is this going to take long?”

“But the people didn’t know about anything like that. They swallowed the propaganda and took me for a saint. They decorated their living rooms with a portrait of me! Can you believe that!?”
“…… well, even if you say so…”
“But I’m certainly a princess. I have to aim to be the saint whose picture the people would want to decorate their homes with. A pure maiden. You listening?. A PURE. M･A･I･D･E･N!”
She finished off saying so with a threatening attitude, and buried her face in the pillow again.

“I have no experience with boys! Don’t you think you should go a little easier on me!?” she yelled with a muffled voice.

“…… In other words, what I did just now went over the limit.”
“Well that’s because Yuuki-san has Arina-san! You’re used to it!”
Princess continued protesting from behind the pillow.
“I did not have that kind of relations with that…”
“But I’ve been raised in complete isolation from boys! I don’t have the ability to take that kind of thing! D, do you want to kill me!? You want to kill a girl with agony!?”
“Huh? but don’t you have a fiancé?”
Immediately, princess raised her face.
“That doesn’t count!!”
“Ah, I thought so.”
“Thinking about the day that narcissist giving me that line… uu–, it’s giving me goosebumps…”
For the fiancée to go so far as saying something like this… I somehow feel sorry for Glenn.

“All right. What I did earlier was not good. Sorry, I meant well but went too far.”
I apologized, and Princess fell silent for several seconds.
“No. I’d rather say you did well.”

Aah–, which is it!?

“The point is, I wasn’t prepared enough. Yes, I’m Lady Demy, not the ‘pure’ Princess Rosé. An unbecomingly lustful young lady who would go so far as call on a young man she fell in love with along the way.”
The princess repeated her setting, as if giving herself some self-suggestion.
“Yosh,” she nodded and went down from the bed.

“……?”

I was bewildered by what she was going to do.
“Sit right there!” commanded Lady Demy.
As she ordered, I sat still on the bed, and for some reason the person I thought was an ojousama sat on the carpet and leaned her weight on my knees.

“Wai…! This is really bad!”
“Oh? why?”
“T, too close to my crotch… no, not that! Aren’t we getting our positions backwards!?”
“Oh well… I guess this means the retainer is usurping his lord. When there’s just the two of us, you’re the master, okay?”
If the knights saw us they’d probably kill me.
……. no, their pride might be destroyed and they might commit suicide first.
“If there’s just the two of us, there shouldn’t be any need for ‘acting’!Or rather, how did we come into this situation anyway!?”

“You know nothing, do you!”
Suddenly, Lady Demy raised her voice.
“I’m your employer, you know? If I say you’re the master, you should do as you’re told and become the master!”

Wait, am I the one being dumb here!?
She’s saying something so out there I don’t understand!
I don’t get it at all!!

As I froze in confusion on what I should be doing, she went back to being Princess Rosé and said,

“I need a man to take the lead. I can’t act as Lady Demy all on my own.”
Then she looked at me with teary, upturned eyes.

“……please.”

It came out.
Princess’ specialty, the ‘Onegai Eyes’.
Damn this, I can’t go against her….
“Ah–, whatever.”
I give up.
To hell with it, whatever happens, I don’t care.
“Okay, I understand. I’ll try doing a gigolo character. … but I’m not exactly experienced at this, so stop me if I went too far.”
She then smiled happily.
“In other words, you can do anything you want so long as I don’t say stop,

right?”
This, I can’t tell whether this is Princess Rosé or Lady Demy anymore.
“Well…, I guess it’s something like that…… maybe.”
“You’re an inarticulate master, aren’t you. But that’s all right, let’s get ourselves used to it. —for now, I’d like you stroke my hair.”

I did as she she told and stroked her hair.
Well, Arina *did* badger me to stroke her hair several times before.
Is this really okay.
This person is the princess, right.
Isthisreallyokaaaaay—….

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 10 – A Tale from Ages Past

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/07/23/joshiyuusha-10/

“I’m thristy,” Lady Demy suddenly muttered and stood up.
“Let’s make some tea.”
She took a kettle and twisted a faucet on a large, flower-vase-looking earthenware.
It seems like this is some kind of a water jug, she filled the kettle with just the right amount of water.

I was wondering how she’s going to boil the water without a stove or fireplace or hearth, but she twisted a lever on the handle and left it alone.

Surprisingly, that was all she had to do to make steam come out. It’s just like an electric kettle.

Well, since there’s magic at work here it probably isn’t right to call it an electric kettle, but the main point is the same, anyway.
Lady Demy poured the hot water from the kettle to a teapot. This part is no different from our world.

Ah. Isn’t this supposed to be the attendant’s job….
When this stupid me finally understood, the black tea was already done.

This world’s black tea looks no different to ours, but it had the slight sweet smell of cake.
She seemed to have put in a drop of brandy, so that was probably why.

“Thanks.”
I said my thanks and tried the tea, Lady Demy also smiled and sipped from her cup.

“That reminds me, I have something I want to ask.”
I broke the silence and took out a certain thing from the E:ID phone.

The jewel left from when I defeated the monster.

“……. what is this?”
From her response, this looks to be a common thing in this world.

Rather than that, Lady Demy seemed to have more interest in the E:ID phone.

"I think it's called a 'Demon Core'…. I think. I don't know about it too well."
"My, to not even know about magic cores."

Lady Demy took one of the magic cores, thought about something, and took a candlestick.
Then she struck the magic core on the candle's wick several times, and chanted…

"Millifire."

Then the tip of the magic core sparked a flame, which spread to the candlestick.
Lady Demy blew the flame left on the magic core, extinguishing the flame as if saying the magic core has finished its duty.

"Just like a match," I said.
"A 'match'…?" Lady Demy asked in doubt.
Seems like matches don't exist in this world.

This is the core that enables the use of magic. A blessing from the gods endowed to everyone."
I don't recall ever learning that in science.
Things are becoming more and more fantasylike.

"You said the *core of magic*, does it mean you have to learn magic to use it?"
"No. Magic training and education is for mastering the use of the magic core hidden inside oneself. Magic cores themselves are easily usable even by children."
"It's complicated, huh."
"Seems like it…. But recently, the art of mastering one's own magic has been called 'magic arts'."
Since it's a new term, it's still not very much in use. Well, since there's no television or internet then the spread of information is likely slow.

According to Lady Demy, magic cores are a daily life necessity. It's a consumable regularly used in hat electric-kettle-lookalike earlier.
It was something the magicians, no, they're called magic artisans now, it's something they developed and marketed worldwide.

I can probably think of it as a battery and leave it at that.

“Where did these come from?”
“Before we met ojousama, I fought off some huge wolves and these came out.”
“Beowulves…… a lot of those monsters roam this area, don’t they.”

I found out how ‘monsters’ are different from ‘animals’.
They were artificially created weapons of war.
They were created in times of war, a robot army of sorts to invade enemy territory with. Which is why when they were defeated, they dropped their remaining energy.

They were in use in conflicts large and small since ancient times, but being unable to be totally defeated, they went feral and started attacking people.
The plants where the monsters are built seemed to keep operating in secret, so their numbers don’t decrease even one bit.

Much less to say that this world is in the middle-age, feudal era.

The neighboring country Cidre would often send in monsters and conversely, they would stealthily send out monsters to pester each other.

“In that case, it looks like more monsters are going to be sent across borders from now on…”
“Why?”
“…… probably, there’s going to be a huge war that’ll involve the whole world.”
“That’s impossible. We royalty won’t do anything like that.”
“Well, I mean for the next era.”
“The next… era?”

Ah—.

I made an arbitrary guess and said something strange.
I was somehow thinking, “If they’re in the middle ages now, then they’re probably going to have some major world war next.”

“Nah, don’t mind me. It wasn’t anything serious,” I said, and Lady Demy smiled.
“Please rest at ease. Before long our country will unite the surrounding countries and try to put our hearts as one. That way we won’t have anything like large

wars.”
“Well, everyone says that and *then* you get into a big fight.”

“Eh?”

Oh crap.
Lady Demy looked like she was taken aback, she froze.
It wasn’t really good of me to speak about my world… particularly about ‘the common sense of the next era.’

“T…… that’s a strange thing you were saying. For Ivan to unite the countries together is a task mandated to us by the heavens. Are you saying we shouldn’t do that?”
“No, well… That kind of thing, I’m sure your neighbors think the same way. Anyway I was really just saying something trivial so please forget about it.”
“Even so, Cidre has been releasing monsters into our country, and even now we haven’t attacked them. Don’t you think bringing the morals of the Born Light is the path to a righteous peace?”
“Yes, well, you said so yourself, didn’t you, Lady Demy. “Unification.” The other side is probably thinking the same so the fault lies in both sides, right? Then it’ll end up in a fight. Uh, seriously, I didn’t mean to say that!”
“No, Cidre’s wickedness is intolerable! They quietly employed pirates, cutting off our sea routes, disrupting our country’s trade!”
“You know, these things aren’t about being right or wrong. Common sense is influenced by culture, the land, and history, so they aren’t the same everywhere. Also, nobody seems to have noticed, but unless you keep pursuing your interests it shrinks on it’s own, and there’s no rule that says ‘you can’t employ pirates.’ Everything at our convenience… Hey, seriously, can we please stop? Even if we have a hot debate here it won’t do anything!”

I tried to cut things off like that, but Lady Demy started thinking,
“I’ve never really thought about it, but it’s just like you said…. If we propagate Ivan’s truth, the surrounding countries are going to resist, on the other hand, we don’t have any intention to live under Cidre……. This will inevitably lead to friction. Uuh…….”
She became troubled, and then….

“Yuuki-san, you’ve got the gift of foresight. You might have what it takes to be

a philosopher.”

“N, nonono, you’re thinking too highly of me! I’m only…….”
“Only?”
Only saying what general knowledge I learned in class, but if I used that explanation…..
“……”

I wonder if it’s okay to tell her my identity.
I’m a little troubled, but, well…. whatever.

“I’m about to say something weird, can I?”
“You’ve been saying weird things since a while ago.”
“You got me there. ……. I, I’m not a person from this world. So probably, my world lives in an age further ahead than this one. That’s why…… just by learning history, I came to know these things.”
Lady Demy showed a slightly surprised face, but she slowly nodded.

“I thought so, that’s where you’re coming from,” she said.

“Eh? …… You knew?”
“Rather than knowing, when I met you the other day I had a sort of a hunch. *Ah, they’re not ordinary foreigners*, something like that.”
Well…… that’s true.
We’re way too suspicious.
“In that case, I can understand why you don’t know about magic stones. …… So it really exists, the ‘World Given Light’.”
“……?”
Another strange phrase appears.
I tilted my head, and Lady Demy laughed, “fufu.”
“There’s still some time before lunch. Let’s go for a little walk, shall we,” she said as she stood up.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 11 – Death of the Louse

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/08/03/joshiyuusha-11/

Lady Demy left her room, accompanied by Yuuki.
She left the door open, and her ‘attendant’ Yuuki hurriedly turned around to close it.

They did not notice the shadow hiding in the ceiling of the staircase a few meters ahead of them, concealing its breath.
Yes, it was the assassin in the employ of the wicked lady.
He blends into his surroundings with magic, wore strange clothing, and with his tempered mental power hid his presence, waiting for his target.

This is the plan.

The target, Yuuki, would start to go down the stairs. At that time, the assassin would blow a poison needle with his mouth.
The needle would pierce his neck, the neurotoxin stop his heart, and he would lose his balance, tumbling down the stairs. The needle is itself made of the poison, frozen with magic.

It disappears instantly, leaving no evidence.

His death will surely be dealt with as an accident of him falling down the stairs, or maybe a fall-down curse by someone… Either way, what happens next is not for the assassin to know.

The assassin held his breath, continuously waiting.
The moment Yuuki came along…….

Together with Lady Demy, I walked along the corridor that was as wide as my own room.
Not long after, I saw the staircase where I split up with Arina.

“That Arina, I wonder if she’s doing well.”
I suddenly thought of her and muttered.
“Oh? how rude. Thinking of another woman while I’m right here with you.”
“N, no…. I don’t mean it like that.”

Somehow I talked about her like a love interest, I somehow feel itchy.
Lady Demy looked at my unrest happily with roguish eyes and smiled as she said, “I’m kidding.”

Maybe because we’re outside, Lady Demy took on a sadistic, high-handed character.
Her switch flips quickly.

“You’re worried about her?”
“She’s a birdbrain after all…. She’d run into trouble as soon as you take your eyes off her, and she’s bad at socializing with people, too. I hope they don’t give her a hard time.”
“It’s almost like she can’t do anything without you around.”
“I’m not saying that, but… she’s not someone who can do things on her own.”
“That girl is not as bull-headed as you think she is, actually, she’s scarily crafty.”
“Huh?”
She’s a good-for-nothing who still holds her chopsticks in a fist even after she’s become a 11th grader you know.
“Just what do you see that makes you think that highly of her.”
“I don’t know? …… A woman’s intuition, I guess?”
“If you call her crafty, then all I can think of is that your definition of crafty is different to mine. Foreign culture is seriously scary.”
“You really look down on her, don’t you.”
“Well, she really *is* dumb…”
As we talked like that, we started going down the stairs.

“Yuu-ku—n!”

……. Uwaa!
The topic of conversation herself appeared wearing maid clothes.
I didn’t even have the time to say “Hi, how are you doing.”
She was thinking something and ferociously dashed towards me… She’s fast!
“Watch ooooooo—ut!”
In the blink of an eye she jumped at my back.

slap

She hit the back of my neck with her palm.

“OUCH! What are you doing!”
“I, I I I, I’m sorryyyy! Arina is a useless and garbage maid! Please insult me as much as you like! K, k, kick me hard!”
“Enough with your awful hobby! Tell me why you did it, why!”
“B, because…”
Arina showed me her palm.

There was a small louse there, dead.

“I was stopping a mosquito…”
“Ah, really…. Thanks. You can see a mosquito from that distance, huh.”
“E, ehe, ehehehe. Arina, has bad eyesight but if it’s Yuu-kun I can watch you from meters away! I can tell the sound of Yuu-kun’s footsteps in a crowd! From the scent as well!”
What are you so damn proud of….
“Look at ojousama’s face, will you? She’s totally creeped out. And you’re making too much of a fuss over a mosquito.”
I nonchalantly said so.
“Y, you can’t, you can’t make light of mosquitoes!”
She said with an angry look.
“Mosquitos are vectors for infectious diseases! Especially in a foreign country, there are many cases where you have no resistance or treatment for mosquito bites! —says mother.”
“U… uh-huh.”

“If Yuu-kun catches HIV or syphilis or anything, h, h, how will I live my life?”

“Why am I getting venereal diseases.”
Also, mosquitoes don’t carry syphilis.
“Y, y, you’re right. A, A, Arina, has nothing to do with it, right. No matter what venereal disease Yuu-kun gets.”
“Leave the venereal diseases out of it already!”
“B, but, Arina… no matter what illness Yuu-kun catches, I’ll accept you.”
“Stop, STOOOP!”
What are you saying in public you nitwit!

“My apologies, Lady Demy. She made you listen to such graphic stories. Just ignore her.”

“N, no…. that was quite enlightening.”
“Huh?”
“Yes! No! Y, you, have a little shame! Hmph, really… you’re beyond hope!”
Oi, you were frantically trying to stop yourself falling forward just now.
Is this princess really all right….
“But well, Arina’s right about the disease.”
I have an insect spray in my E:ID phone so I’ll handle it later.
“That was careless of me… you saved me there.”
“E, ehehe.”
As I thanked her Arina put on a drowsy smile. Just the way she usually does.
“U, um. F, for my reward, will you step on me with all your strength….”
“Rejected.”
“Uuu…. and after I finally put on maid clothes, too.”
“Your image of maid clothes is too crooked. Apologize to every other maid out there!”

The three of us went down the stairs.
We went down with me in between Lady Demy and Arina.
“Arina, are you doing your job properly? Did you make trouble for other people?”
“N, no… I didn’t… I think?”
“Oi oi. Are you really going to be all right.”
“Yes. Arina will be all right. … Yuu-kun as well, watch out for bugs, okay.”
“Is that your important point.”
“Because it’s really dangerous!”
“Yeah yeah.”
……. hm.
So she didn’t get a mental breakdown.
If she broke down she would’ve cried and complained.

“Oh right, this is good timing. We were going to the chapel, can you tell Tris?”
Having received the message from Lady Demy, Arina nodded.
“Okay then, I have work to do so…”
She waved her hand.
…… well.
It seems that she’s going to be all right.

I still have a touch of anxiety I can't shake off, so I watched her back as she went away, and felt just a little bit of relief.

After Yuuki and the others left the premises, the killing intent waiting hidden on the ceiling started to move.
The assassin was feigning calmness, but he was shaken beyond measure.
The target appeared as planned, but just as he shot the blowgun an intruder appeared.
The calculated shot missed the mark, hit the floor, and disappeared.
Well…… he was ready for that much.
Somehow the target was surrounded by the maid and the Lady, going down the stairs as if protecting him.
With that formation, it was impossible to kill him with a blowgun.
No matter how he aimed, it was going to hit someone other than the target.

……. was this a calculated move?

No no no. There couldn't possibly be an attendant who uses his own master as a shield… He doesn't register my presence in the first place. It was a coincidence. It must be. He decided that was the case and went out of the mansion for the next plan. If they were going to the chapel, then he should ambush them there.

The Isky residence gardens are covered by groves of trees, so if one entered those groves and left the gardes one would reach the chapel faster than through the normal route.
He ran through the groves with stealth steps and a speed faster than normal people—….

But there was a single maid standing there, the assassin became more and more taken aback.

It was Arina.

The invisibility robe doesn't work on her.
She saw through the assassin's existence.
"Ah, dear me. These insects keep buzzing buzzing buzzing around my precious Yuu-kun."
Arina made an affected lament.

“Not that I don’t understand, though. Yuu-kun’s aroma is just like sweet nectar dripping from a flower. Can’t be helped that it would draw insects.”

The assassin probably noticed that this maid is not normal.
He prepared a short sword and got ready for a fight.
But Arina showed no signs of stopping and continued talking incoherently as if in a trance.
“That’s right! Hey you, be a honeybee! Steal some pollen from Yuu-kun’s stamen secretly and pollinate my pistil! It would be great! That way Yuu-kun won’t be troubled and I will be blessed with a child that carries his sublime genes!”

It was beyond his understanding, or perhaps he didn’t care, the assassin did not react to Arina’s nonsensical remarks.

“Huh? You don’t understand? Is it too difficult? In short, this is your last chance from Yuu-kun the merciful. If you say yes you will become a useful tool for Yuu-kun. It’s all right, this way you will be happy without having to think about anything anymore. Most of all, isn’t being useful to the sublime Yuu-kun the greatest honor for anything alive? You must be glad, right. There’s no other answer but yes, right!”

The assassin did not respond.
Instead, he ran forward without any excessive movements.
Then with a speed that the eye couldn’t follow, he lunged at Arina with the short sword—.

“Ah, okay. Die then.”
Arina caught the short sword with just her index and middle fingers and smashed it.
More fear came rushing on to the shaken assassin.
Arina grabbed her enemy’s head with her hand.

“Pest extermination,” she says as she shoved an off-the-shelf can of bug spray into his nose and emptied it there without a shred of hesitation.

“AGAAAAAAAAAAH!”

The assassin who had forged his willpower his entire life screamed.
“GAAAAAAAAAAA! AAAH!! AAAAAAAAAAH!! AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!”

The potent poison that could paralyze even cockroaches, who possessed high survivability, hit his mucous membrane like the cut of a blade, his body started to convulse against its possessor's will, and the assassin writhed on the soil.
Arina trampled him on the forehead, unmindful of the fact that her underwear is clearly visible from that angle.

pshhhh!

The spray assailed his face.
"HIGYAAAAAAAAA!"
"It'll be all right! You're not going to die at once! Arina reckons that you have three minutes!"
Which means he was sentenced to three more minutes of hellish anguish.
Arina bound the suffering man with magic.
This way, he looks like a gigantic writhing caterpillar.
Then Arina sat down on the ground, and thinking something, she placed the man's head on her knees and gently brushed his head like she was cradling a baby.

"The—re there. You jusht made the lasht mishtake of your life, you did—"
«TN: I can't into baby talk»

The man's eyes were bloodshot and popped out. His face dyed red as if it was painted with blood, fluids ran unceasingly out of his nose, and from his gagged mouth leaked a roar that did not sound like anything human.
On the other hand, Arina watched over him with an expression full of a mother's kindness.
"You'll be awwight. I'll tell you about the gweatness of living for Yuu-kun's sake so you can die in peace, okay. If you're born again be useful to him okay. Fufu. I'm really kind, aren't I."
She said with an enraptured expression.

……three minutes later.

"Huh?"
Arina, who was fervently talking about Yuu-kun's physical traits, noticed her listener was no longer moving.
Arina took the spray can in her hand, shook it, and sprayed it in her victim's

nose.
Now that he's a dead body, he did not react at all.

"Aa-ah. Even though I was getting to the good parts. You're really disappointing, dying without listening to it."

Arina stood up.
The corpse on her knees fell down to the ground like a marionette with its strings cut.
Arina tore the corpse's clothes away, baring his chest. She picked up the point of the blade she smashed up earlier. Then she made thin cuts on the corpse's chest.
Soon those cuts became a sentence.

It was written thus in the letters of this world.

I will not die to small fry like this.
Do not raise your hand against me or Lady Demy again!
Otherwise it will be your turn next!

A few minutes later, the corpse was thrown into Lady Welsh's room and caused a small ruckus, but because it was dealt with in secret it remained unknown to Yuuki or Lady Demy.

⇐ *Previous* | *TOC* | *Next* ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 12 – Teachings of the Born Light and the Hero Bacchus

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/08/17/joshiyuusha-12/

Giving a sidelong glance at the Isky residence's tall trees, we walked along the brick path.
As we did so we reached a beautiful garden with pretty flower beds all over the surface.
It was one with a fountain in the middle, and was as large as a school sports ground.

"Amazing."

I gave my honest impressions.
"Ah–, but the trees around it are blocking the sunlight, it's a bit of a bother. If only they weren't there–"
The trees were all crowded like a wall, giving a gloomy impression, the flower bed is the only thing bright this place.

"Marquis Isky *is* in charge of a national border territory. These trees are necessary for defense," Lady Demy told me.

Naruko-like crime alarms were stretched out between the trees, if there were an intruder or monster they would be able to immediately deal with it.

We left the gardens and reached the building beyond it.

It was the chapel.
It was the size of a single private home.
The multicolored glass mosaic and the ornaments giving off a feeling of dignity was not so different from the "chapels" of my world.

Lady Demy gripped the handle
—whoops.

"Ojousama, I'll open it."
"Oh, will it be alright?"
"I'm tentatively your 'attendant' after all."

Lady Demy didn't look like she minded much, but if I keep forgetting my job here I'm going to seriously be a sponger, ewh.

The door was considerably stout, it opens with a wooden *creak* sound.

Inside the chapel there were seats for the congregation and in the innermost part a place to lift prayers, as I thought, the 'general' structure is similar.
If I recall correctly, there isn't a definite standard for the inner structure of a church or chapel, right?
In that case… it look so similar I can say it's 'almost the same.'

"Is there belief in gods in Yuuki-san's world?"
While we enter inside, Lady Demy said so.
"Well, there are. There are people who believe in one god, and there are people who believe in many gods including gods of the land."

"In our world a great number of people believe in the [Faith of the Born Light]."
"Bornlight?"
"The 'Light' of our world isn't a god, but the teachings borne by our ancestors."
"Hee—"
That's a little bit different.
Whether it be monotheism or polytheism, our world has various religions large and small. However, in every one of them, light and earth, countries and creatures are all creations of the god(s).
A religion where humans create things by themselves, at least there are none that I know of.
"Is is strange?"
"Well, in my world it is."
"I'm sure that would be so. It'll be strange if it isn't."
"???"
Lady Demy probably understood my confused expression and chuckled.
Then she stood at the innermost altar and started to tell a story.

"This is our creation story."

The World of Legends.
God gave the name 'human' to a fragment of himself.

He divided it into two.
Then to the two humans, he made them live in different, adjoining, worlds. To one he gave the gift of light, and the other he forced to live in the darkness.

The people given light,

and the people not given light.

The trials began from there.
The people not given light had no day nor night, they only had to continue on living in the darkness.

They longed for light.

The people given light know none of it, and were taught to *be fruitful and multiply*, and built culture.

Then one day.
The people not given light noticed a certain change.
Light dwelt in their hands.
It was a small, faint light, but it was a warm light.
For living in the darkness, dreaming and longing for light, they were granted the power to bring forth their own light.
The people not given light were able to weather the test.

They met together.
They made light together.
Then they sent the light up into the sky.

The sun, the creation of light…. it was the moment the light was born.

"Eh…. that 'world given light' is… our world?"
"Not without reason. Since Yuuki-san's world doesn't have magic or magic cores, the story checks out."
"Uh huh…"

If we believed in the same god, then certainly, I can accept the structure of the chapels being similar.
The polytheism like in Japanese shrines and temples was each nation's diverse evolution.
They were born out of fear of the supernatural, the flavor of local teachings are

strong.

A lot of monotheistic religions, however, historically broke off from a single faith.
It's possible to say that this *Faith of the Born Light* is one of those offshoots.

"That's true, but… why did god do something like that?"
"The thoughts of heaven are immeasurable and unknowable to us."
I thought so….
"Rather than that, even in our world different monks and scholars interpret this 'world given light' differently in the first place. There are those who say it's a paradise where the dead go, and those who suggest it's a hell of depravity. — even I thought it was a dubious fairy-tale."

Lady Demy descended from the altar and walked to my side.
It might have been the heavy and divine design doing it, but she looked like the descent of an angel… Lady Demy walking towards me had that kind of mysterious air about her.

While I was a little enraptured she finally stopped before my eyes.
"I believed in its existence when I met with Yuuki-san. So the world given light really exists," she said, smiling.

Crap. Hot damn she's cute.

"W, well… since I can't use magic that's a reasonable explanation."
I said while hiding my trembling.

…… hm?

"Huh, then how about Arina? Why can she use magic?"
"That is…. I don't know. Arina-san is a person from Yuuki-san's world, right?"
"T, that's right. We've been together since we're small."
"But, there's no magic in Yuuki-san's world."
"There isn't. At least as far as I know."
"Hmmm…."
Lady Demy looked a little troubled.
"This is just a thought, but maybe among Arina-san's relatives there are people who wandered from this world?"

“That’s it! I completely forgot. She, seems to be the *hero’s* daughter.”

“Eh?”
Lady Demy was caught off-guard.
“The goal of our journey was to defeat the Demon King as ‘heroes’. We got thrown into this world not knowing anything, I don’t know if that’s true or not. Is there something like ‘heroes’ in this world?”

Lady Demy then made an incredulous face.
“Arina-san is the hero’s daughter?”
“That’s what her mother said.”
“There *is* a great man who was called a hero in this world. His name was *Bacchus*.”

What’s with that name. Sounds like *baka*.

«TN: *baka* means idiot»

“So this *Bacchus* person, could he be Arina’s dad?”
“That would be weird. —Bacchus, died young 150 years ago. He didn’t leave any descendants.”
“Huh? … the story doesn’t add up.”
“That’s how it is.”
“So that person’s line doesn’t continue.”
“No, I can’t say that for sure. Bacchus can use magic from a young age, it is said he uses it to face off against monsters. If Arina has the blood of Bacchus, then I can see how she could master magic to such a high degree like that.”

I’m becoming more and more confused.
While Arina possesses the same power as the hero Bacchus, her relations with him is chronologically impossible.

“I think we might be able to figure something out once we get back to Ivan castle…”
So before that, we have to settle the problem at hand.
As I was about to conclude with that, the scenery outside the window became lively.

3, 4 maids came along to take care of the gardens.
Seeing that, Lady Demy sighed and said:

“……. so this place doesn’t have gardeners.”
“So this is usually done by specialized gardeners?”
“Well, simple care can often be done by maids, but even when I came here as Rosé I’ve never seen a single gardener.”
“Hmmm….”
I don’t know this world’s common sense and exceptionalities, so I just threw in noncommittal answers.

The maids weren’t taking an attentive meeting-the-guests stance like earlier, but did their work while leisurely chatting as befits their age.
In things like this girls aren’t any different no matter what world they’re from, I guess.

As we carefreely watched them, one of them said a disturbing line.

[I’m telling you! Lady Demy is *definitely* Princess Rosé!]

“Ugh”
“Oh”

[Well, they *do* look similar.]
[She must be investigating Glenn’s affairs!]
[Ah! You’re right!]

“”……””

chiing, they found us out.

“What do we do? Looks like we’re getting in a pinch from day one.”
I asked Lady-Demy-slash-Princess-Rosé.
“W…. what should we do….”
She asked me back, pale in the face.
“Humm, if you ask me…. should we barge in and say [Demy is not Rosé]..?”
“N, no, that would backfire.”
“Yeah, you’re right.”
“I, it’ll be …. alright. Since we look similar there will obviously be suspicions. A, a, acting like Demy boldly should take care of the problem!”
“It’ll be a suspicious act right after being talked about.”
“U, umm…!”

[But, I think she's not.]

With no idea of the panic the princess was getting into, one of the maids said so.

[Eh—. Why?]
[Well, you see. Lady Demy was getting all frisky with her attendant in her room just now. That pure Princess Rosé wouldn't do something like that.]

"THAT'S. IT!"

Lady Demy's eyes shined with a dim glimmer.
Then she faintly smiled and turned towards me.

Ah—. I have a bad feeling about this.

The chapel is furnished with a back door, we could leave it without being noticed by the working maids.
From there we followed the wall towards the main gate and went where we were barely unseen by them.

Standby OK.

"……. You're really all right with this?"
Before we carry out the plan, I confirmed with her.
"A, asking me this late, is rather impolite you know…"

Is that really true?
I don't get it.

"Well then, umm…. Commence Plan!"
As I gave the signal, Lady Demy raised her voice.

"YOU BEAST! GET YOUR HANDS OFF ME!"

She continued.

"JUST WHO DO YOU THINK I AM? I'M ARCHDUKE MERRY'S THIRD DAUGHTER, DEMY CHAMPAGNE BLANC DE BLANCS MERRY! I'M NOT SOMEONE A COMMONER LIKE YOU CAN TOUCH SO CAREFREELY!"

With a voice this loud the maids are sure to notice us.
That was fine.

That was the plan.

Title:

[The Show The Maids A Love Affair Through A Hole In The Wall And Make Them Think That *That Shameless Ojousama Couldn't Possibly Be The Pure Princess Rosé, Yeah, Absolutely* Plan]

It's possibly an insane plan, but well, I'm sure I can expect results from it.

But still, Princess Rosé, that act scared me out of my wits.
I was so surprised I was somewhat baffled.
(*Yuuki-san! Come on!*)
She whispered in protest.
Her cute face teared up and blushed a little.

I couldn't possibly let the Princess be embarrassed alone. I promised her I'll act the gigolo… I prepared myself for the act.

The outline was….
Eh—, Ahem.

"You sure can talk. Wasn't it you who asked me out to a place where no one can see us?"

As I said that I brushed Lady Demy's cheek.
She *did* say I can do whatever I like……. *This is alright, right?* I thought. Then…

"*I said* Don't TOUCH ME!"

slap
I received an open forehand slap.
"I, I… was only asking for a little walk!"
Uuh—, that hurt a bit.
Well, I should expect this much from a tsundere lady….

"Really?"
I faked being calm and approached her with *that.* The thing called a *kabe-don* in my world.
"I was pretty sure you had enough of *playing* in the room and wanted a change of scenery."

(*U, umm…. just now in the room, er… the two of us were r, reveling?*)

She asked to confirm the setting here.
(*I was going to make it a continuation from before. Is it bad?*)
(*Not at all. It's quite delicious.*)
What do you mean by that, you.

"YOU BRUTE! We're right next to a holy chapel you know…. tsk! So I guess a manservant like you can't even tell a good place from bad."
"Doesn't the immoral feeling feel good? You like this kind of thing don't you?"
"I don…"
"Don't lie to me. I know everything."
"……!"
Unable to deny, Lady Demy looked away.
"See," I said as I threw her a triumphant smile.
"Now, since we both have come to an agreement…. Let's do *the usual thing*."

(*T, the usual… thing?) (Just ad-lib it….)*
(Mou! You're being too reckless!)
(Sorry), I said, then Lady Demy's expression changed.
Ah. Crap.
It was the smile I saw in the chapel just now.

(I'm not going to be responsible for anything that happens next, okay)

Lady Demy, who just had her switched set to something other than on or off dropped to the floor with a thud.

Then she looked up at me with teary eyes and blushing cheeks, hiding her lips that were trembling in shame with her small fist.
"Uuuh," she showed hesitation for an instant, then slowly she said with a weak voice….

"……. With Sir Commoner's hand…. please, umm… d, discipline this sefish noble Demy…!"
As if her true emotions had burst out, she then clings to my leg.
"Please…! Paint this arrogant Demy in Yuuki-sama's color by Yuuki-sama's scolding and punishments!" she begged. Hold on…

Eeeeeeee——h?

These two, do they always do something like thiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiis?

T, this can't even be called outrageous anymore!
It's way too deep it's making my brain melt out of my ears!

"Demy, can't live without Yuuki-sama. Demy wants Yuuki-sama more than bread or water!"
"Ojousama"
I spoked to Demy, and her eyes shined like a puppy.
"Yes…! What will it be!? Please tell me to do anything you want!" she replied.

"About the maids. They already ran away in surprise."
"Eh."
"They all went pale in the face."

"……"

There was an awkward silence.

Lady Demy rose to her feet and brushed away the dirt clinging to the hems of her clothes.

"……."

More awkward silence.

"Will it really be all right now?"
"Eh, ah… I think it'll be fine, maybe. Thanks for your cooperation."
"Ah, no… that was nothing."

"……."

"There's something I'd like to ask."
"Yes, what is it?"
"You couldn't possibly have just wanted to do that, could you?"

"……."
"……."

"……d, d"

Lady Demy said thus with a teary face.
"…… don't hate me!"

She begged with her eyes teary for a different reason that before, to which I can do nothing but nod.

⇐ *Previous* | *TOC* | *Next* ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 13 – Hidden Passage

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/08/23/joshiyuusha-13/

“You’re asking if this is all right? Yes, it is, there’s no– problem at all! Ohohohohoho!”

We returned to the chapel and Lady Demy laughed out loud like that.

“By showing something that absurd, nobody will come to discover my true identity! Right!”
“….. well, I suppose”
“What was it again Yuuki? My ‘attribute’?”

“Masochist-on-counterattack”

“That’s right, that’s the one! Ufufufu, it’s just so *me*!”
Lady Demy spun happily round and round. She’s completely lost herself in self-loathing.
“Come Yuuki! Lick my shoes! If you don’t want to you’d better push me down! OH– HOH HOH HOH HOH HO….———!”

Lady Demy guffawed loudly, but her voice gradually withered. Then…

“….. Haaaah……”

She let out a deep sigh.
She collapsed and sat down on the chapel pew.

“……. Ahahaha. I want to die”

This time it was a languid laugh.
Now how should I talk to her….
“Yuuki-san, I’m sorry. I even embarrassed you”
“No, well, I’m fine with it”
If you’re asking me, I’d rather say it was a delicious memory.
“Are *you* alright, ojousama?”
“It’s a fictional status after all. No matter what rumors they tell Princess Rosé’s good name won’t be hurt. Now everything depends on my own mental strength”
She said with a weak smile.

Well, the fight is all going as planned.
Even if she said the shock was greater than she thought it won't help her any to complain so late in the game, but still, she's a girl….
"It'll all be solved with time," I comforted her.
"Yeah… you're right"
Lady Demy slowly nodded, she wiped faint tears off her face and stood up.
"Thank you very much. My feelings cleared up a little"
Thank goodness. She seems to have recovered a bit.
"Yes……. It'll all be solved with time. No matter how shameless Demy becomes it has nothing to do with me. Whatever shameless fetish I expose in front of the many maids will be blamed on Demy after all. This way, in three days the maids are going to look at me with eyes that go 'uwaah, there's a lady here who clings to her manservant's leg like a dog', but I can bear it by pretending not to know. The rumor is probably becoming hot news throughout the residence before the starting shot of the battle. Speaking of which I also felt like showing perverted acts to the nearby gentlemen but I already put it away inside me as something unnecessary. Still, I mean, being surprised by one's own fetishes to the point of fainting AHAHAHAHAHAHA—"

Oi, are you serious?
She hasn't recovered even one bit.

Once again, Lady Demy laughed "ufufu, ohoho" while she spun round and round.
"Yuuki-san, let's have a toast! Kyaho–i to the new me♪"

…… Let's leave her alone for a while …….

I gave a sidelong glance to Lady Demy who was continuing her deranged dance and decided to check out the chapel.
The stained glass designs, the unfamiliar statue of some hero or angel, the details of the workmanship….
I walked while looking at all that.

"Hm?"

It was when I stepped up on the innermost altar.
I found a slight gap on the wall with a grapevine relief.
Somehow, the relief's unevenness felt like a doorknob.

As a test, I tried pulling it.

clack!

……. I was right.
It looked like a normal wall at a glance, but a thick board snugly popped out of it, behind it there was empty space.
And there was a flight of stairs leading to a basement there.

Oh.
It looks like I found something I'm not supposed to here.

"Lady Demy!"
I called her, and the Lady wallowing in escapism said,
"Fufu, what do you need from this pervert?"
"Enough with that, come over here! ……I found a hidden passage"
Immediately Lady Demy's face made a complete change and she came over with a serious look.
"To have something like this in a chapel…"
"What do you think?"
"Underground cellar… or maybe treasure chamber. In any case making one at the chapel instead of at the main house feels a bit off"
"I wonder if there's any proof of espionage?"
To my question, ojousama groaned, "I don't know".
"Are we going in?"
"Yeah, but. I *really* want to do that, but…"
Lady Demy gripped the hem of her skirt.
"If I get this dress dirty they'll suspect me….
Ojousama's dress was certainly unfit for crawling about. If she gets it dirty they'll suspect that she went in here, which isn't good.
"All right. I'll go in alone first"
I said as I summoned a flashlight from the E:ID phone's [Items] entry.
"Please wait here, ojousama"
"All right. Please be very careful"

A chill drifted from the passage, the light of the sun doesn't enter at all.
I shined the flashlight on the path, but it was quite wide. The walls are strengthened with stone and there were lights on the top part.
There was no doubt that this was made for people to pass through.

5 minutes passed since I started my intrusion.
It'll be bad if I went in too deep and can't return…, I thought, and then a human shape appeared in front of me, which startled me.

But when I took a closer look, it was a set of armor set into the walls.
Since it was fastened with chain and pin there's likely nobody inside.

"That was a scare…"

I stroked down my chest, then at that moment.

[WARNING!!]

The smartphone rang an alert sound.

[There are monsters around, please take caution]

There was a noise, *jangle jangle*, the restraining chains fell away and the armor started to move.

THIS THING'S A MONSTER!!

"I..! [Item]! 'Knight's sword', Equip!"

I shouted to the E:ID phone in rapid succession.

[Ready…. Equip!]

The moment I gripped the sword, the suit of armor swung its spear down.
I barely was able to blow it off…. or I was supposed to, but the enemy was so strong I dropped my sword.
If I tried to pick it up I'm surely going to be pierced by that spearhead.
I took my distance.

"Scrap Iron Sword!"

I prepared my next weapon.

Taking a blow like before with *this* will most likely break it. Holding this was only going to give me a temporary peace of mind. The suit of armor closed the

distance without minding it and delivered a blow.

“Hii!”

I made a short scream and evaded.
As it is, I’m better off running away, but I don’t have the leisure to show my back.
It’s not going to be funny if I get hit by a spear when I was sprinting away with all my power.
That said, this normal high school student was not strong enough to defeat it.

—Then I can only do this!

“[Skill]! ‘Salamander Cannon’!”

I ordered the E:ID phone.

……. however.

[ERROR]
“Huh!?”
[Bad command. Conditions unsatisfactory]

Battery remaining… 80%

“That’s supposed to be enough, why can’t you fire!? —Uwaaa!”
I voiced my protest while avoiding attacks.
[How to use: Salamander Cannon requires a wide open space to fire. Usage is locked under unsatisfactory conditions]
Well yeah, firing that gun indoors is going to end in something bad.
“You’re too friggin smart…!”
But if I can’t use it now I’m just going to get killed right here.
“Release Lock!”
[Releasing Lock is not allowed with your current level]

sching!

At that moment the scrap iron sword I used for defense broke.
Congratulations, I’m now unarmed.

“Do something! I’m going to die!!”
[Looking up Optimal Countermeasure…]

“Hurry hurry hurry…. Hiii!”
The suit of armor seems to understand that I’m now unarmed, its pursuit was becoming more and more relentless.

[Lookup Complete. Appropriate Skill Unlocked]

“A new ‘skill’?”

[Ready. *Strike Bubble*. Emulator Set Up!]

pang!

Suddenly, the enemy’s spear bounced away before my eyes.

It was repelled by a spherical barrier that appeared, completely surrounding me.
The enemy repeated its attacks, but it was rendered useless by the sphere bouncing it back, *boing boing*.
“T, this is…”

[How to use: Strike Bubble. A Power to manipulate a bubble that can be used for attack and defense]
As it said so, the terminal displays some usage examples, with illustrations.

“Ummm… So I can also attack while cancelling the barrier…. Right!”

I gave it a try.

“*BURST*!”
[Action”]

bang, the barrier swelled, then burst open like a popping balloon.
The suit of armor was pushed back from the shock.

“Umm, this one, I push my hands out…. *Jet Jacuzzi*!”
[Action!]
Next, countless bubbles gushed out of my outstretched hands like from a water truck.
Unable to take it, the suit of armor stepped back, one section of its arms even detached, dropping the spear.
“It was helpful, but the skill still lacks a clincher…. Now something like a finishing blow is….”

There’s one like that in the usage examples.

[Tearing The Enemy’s Armor Off By Internal Pressure]

“This is it!”

I stopped the Jet Jacuzzi, the enemy pressed close for a counterattack with its fist.

I turned towards its body, thrusted my fist at it again, and made a bubble.

This time it wasn’t defensive.

I made bubbles appear on the suit of armor’s joints.

…… then.

[*BURST*!]

[Action!]

bang!

The bubbles swelled all together and burst, tearing off the suit of armor’s armor.

Since it was made of armor itself, taking this attack means certain death.

The armor clattered down and a magic core rolled out from the middle of it.

“…… phew–”

I’m saved.

I sighed in relief, then.

“*Lamp*”

“Eh”

Somebody chanted, and the lamps up above lit up simultaneously. The view surrounding me immediately became bright.

Crap, I’m found out!

Blood drained from my face.

“……. Who might you be?”

Asking with a tone like questioning a suspicious person, a woman walked from the end of the passage.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 14 – Suspicion

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/08/31/joshiyuusha-14/

Left alone back in the chapel, Rosé was becoming regretful for the thing she did earlier, even as she was being worried over Yuuki.

She's been doing strange things today.
Employing Yuuki who suddenly appeared, claiming him as her attendant for her disguise.
Up to this point…. she herself thought it was a clever scheme.

But what the hell was that just now?
Turning the pecking order around in the room.
Clinging to his feet.
Even if it's a strategy, just where did she learn degenerate acts like those…?

Was she simple not self-aware that she's been longing for those kinds of acts all along?

To boot, even though she just met Yuuki today, she feels a happiness she's never felt before whenever she sees him, like this.

In front of him, she wants to show the 'her' that's not herself… that desire would occupy her mind.

What is this.
This is weird.
Something's strange.
Something's—'wrong'.

Well, sure, he's a good person.
He never hesitated even though he came from another world, he takes care of people, seeing from his relationship with Arina, he'd go along with her plans even though it's unreasonable for him, and he even possesses advanced education.

So, it's obvious how she'd feel safe near him.

——…….?

Yeah.
Which means, there's nothing—
Wrong with it, I guess.

Huh?
Just now, I…
What did I think was wrong?

Hmm…..——?

CRASSH!

A metallic sound rang from the passage and Rosé's mind came back to reality.

What happened to Yuuki's infiltration.
Rosé did not know what happened.
"Yuuki-san….!"
To hell with dirty dresses.
Running out of patience, Rosé ran down the stairs.
While she went down the stairs, she heard the sound of a sword falling and the sound of something knocking onto something several times.
Was Yuuki fighting a monster?
She made that guess and the sounds suddenly vanished.
As she finally reached the last step, the magic lamps installed on the walls suddenly lit up.

Rosé discovered that the underground passage was much wider than she thought and the stairs she came down on was no more than just one of its exits.
The passage stretched in the direction of the residence and away from it.
Left or right? She didn't know which direction Yuuki went, but then Yuuki himself came along from the direction opposite of the residence.
Then behind him came along a young Faith of the Born Light nun.

She looked like she was taking a suspect to the authorities.

"Please wait, Sister! Where are you taking my manservant?"
Rosé protested while she walked.
"Manservant? This man is not a thief?" said the nun, looking surprised by Rosé's entry.
"I'm Archduke Merry's third daughter, Demy. I was invited to the Isky residence

and will be staying here from today”
“I’m Sister Nikka. I’m stationed at this chapel”
They each established their social standings by way of self-introductions, and went back to talking about Yuuki.

“Sister Nikka, did this man steal something?”
“No, but when I asked what he was doing in the underground passage he wouldn’t say anything. I needed to take him for questioning”

He undoubtedly thought it was bad if he blurted something out so he kept silent….
If things stay like this Yuuki will be brought before Marquis Isky and put to trial.

“This man is not one to steal anything. Cease your investigation please”
“If he would honestly say what he’s doing down here everything would be settled”
“He probably lost his way or snuck down here because of dumb curiosity. Is that something worth questioning? That’s right isn’t it, Yuuki?”
Yuuki hung his head and nodded.
“I thought it’s weird that there’s an underground passage here. Actually, what is this place?”
He skillfully turned the question back.

Haah, Nikka sighed.
“This is an emergency escape route from Marquis-sama’s residence for the unlikely case it was attacked. It’s normally not used so I used it for my solitary stay”

……I see.
That’s a likely explanation.

“This man destroyed a defense-purpose magical creature, of all things. Unlawful entry and property damage. Plus, this is the basement of a divine chapel”
So the metallic sound earlier was that…!
“Lady Demy, even though you are guests this has gone over the line. If you say he’s your servant the I assume you are willing to take responsibility?”

Rosé was in a predicament.

Destroying property at the residence and defeating a magical creature at the basement of a chapel are crimes with differing degrees.
It's not a matter of money.
As it is, if Yuuki was put on trial and was suspected for treason against god nobody can say anything back.
That is to say nothing of it being a force majeure.
She couldn't defend him even if she brought the name of the Royal Family. No, if she did that even the Ivan name will take blame.

—to take Yuuki back, there's no time but now!

"Of course, Sister Nikka"

I'm sorry, Yuuki-san…!

slap!

Rosé gave Yuuki's cheek an open hand slap with all her strength.
Now that they're in a situation where they have nothing arranged beforehand they couldn't put up an act. Though it had the strength of a girl, it was a serious slap.
The surprise attack made Yuuki's face wince.

"How dare you embarrass me?"
She said with a cold voice.

She couldn't see what his face looked like receiving this injustice.
Was he surprised? Did he cry?
—Was he angry?
She couldn't read him.

…… my chest feels tight….

Why does she have to treat him, who risked danger for her sake, with such awful treatment.
Rosé felt like she was going to cry.

However, if she doesn't harden her heart here, he will be thrown to jail.
That had to be avoided at all costs.
"I won't forgive any more recklessness. Do you understand?"
"……."

Yuuki did not respond.
Was he so angry he couldn't answer?
Rosé prayed.
Please.
Just this time, please play along with me just this time!

"I'm…. very sorry"
Yuuki said so with a sulky voice.

Then,

grin, he smiled.

From an angle the nun couldn't see, he considered Rosé and smiled to her.
(*I'm all right. Go on*)
The smile carried that meaning.
Even in this situation, he was instead worrying over Rosé.
Rosé's eyes became more and more moist.

She had better leave this place before her tears burst.

"Sister, I will take responsibility for this man's retraining. Will that be alright with you?"
Sister Nikka nodded.
"…… Alright. Please make sure this doesn't happen again. The heavens watch you wherever you are"
"Yes. My servant and I will bear this in mind"
She said this and bowed, and took Yuuki, feigning a sulk, out of the basement.

TN: No stray BLANKs this time, I hope. :)

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 15 – At The End of the Underground Passage

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/09/09/orejimi-15/

Lady Demy and I closed the cover to the underground passage and quickly left the chapel.

The cheek Ojousama slapped still hurt but thanks to that I was saved.
I don't know what will become of me if I were brought before Marquis Isky.
But it seemed to weigh quite heavily on Lady Demy's mind, she's been moving without saying a single word.
Then as we left the gardens on our way back to the Isky residence.
"Yuuki-san….! …. I'm very sorry…"
Ah–ah.
She finally burst into tears….

Lady Demy apologised to me with tears dripping.

"I! I had no right! to Yuuki-san's cheek…"
"No no, you saved me didn't you. It was my fault for being discovered"
I'm alright, I told her again and again but Lady Demy's feelings show no signs of settling.
I took out a handkerchief from the E:ID phone and wiped her tears.
"I, what was I doing. I'm always making trouble for Yuuki-san. I embarrassed you! I put you in danger!"
"I told you It's alright already"
"How can it be alright! If you were still caught like that there won't be anything I can do either as Demy or as Rosé!"
"R… really?"
I thought if it was Princess Rosé she could simply take me out of prison somehow…
"To send out Yuuki-san who doesn't know anything, what was I doing!? W, what if Yuuki-san d, d… died…"

Ah.
Now it would be better if she didn't continue to the end.

If you put ‘the worst case’ into words you’ll get emotional. Especially girls.
Knowing that from experience with Arina, I wrapped my arms around Lady Demy to at least calm her down.
“Fuah!”
Lady Demy was startled for an instant, but after a while she buried her head in my chest, seeking comfort”
Next is, to slowly speak to her.
“… it’s all right. I came back thanks to Ojousama”
Aah-.
We’re acting a bit like lovers now, but since we already thoroughly did this and that it’s fine, right?

Lady Demy sobbed for a while, but finally took a deep breath.
Good, she seems fine.
I let her go.
“You’ve calmed down?”

“…. yes. Really, I’ve been causing you nothing but trouble,” Lady Demy said, despondent.
“Yuuki-san. Please don’t involve yourself on this matter anymore”
“Eh, so I’m really fired!?”
“I can’t possibly fire you! I want you to always be beside, I mean, cooperate with me! But the underground passage turned out to be me overthinking things, I’m even beginning to think Marquis Isky might be innocent”
“Nope”
I declared.
“You’re not overthinking things”
Lady Demy made a surprised face.
“It’s suspicious. That nun, she appeared right after I took down the monster and started blaming me”
“No way, to even suspect a nun”
It’s probably a gap of religious outlook.
It seems you’re not supposed to suspect clergy of having secrets, but…
“No matter how I look at it, I can only see it as her expecting the intruder to die. But since I took down the defense system, she hurriedly showed herself and made it so that I don’t continue further, don’t you think? If that’s true then

there's definitely something in the residence"
"…. But! If that's true then I can't expose Yuuki-san to danger all the more!"
"I can't possibly leave Ojousama alone! —Also, I made a promise to the knights. I said *I'll definitely protect her*. If you fire me now, I can't look them in the face anymore"
"……"

Lady Demy groaned as she made a troubled look, but said this after a while.

"If Yuuki-san says so, then… Will you help me just a little bit more?"

At the passage Lady Demy and Yuuki left.
Only Sister Nikka was left alone in the chilly air.
She looked towards the immobilized suit of armor.
"Impossible, to even defeat the Automata, " she muttered.
"*Off*"
She chanted, and the lamps along the passage simultaneously turned dark.
Then Nikka, with practiced steps, proceeded in the darkness, and opened a certain door.
The room that would in our world be called 4-tatami, was crammed with desks and bookshelves, and there were also test tubes, beakers, and magic cores rolling around.
There was a person sitting inside.

"Yo, welcome back"
It was Glenn.
Rosé's fiancé and also Marquis Isky's son was waiting for her in this cramped room.

"Did Lady Demy's lover die?"
"No. He's still alive. He defeated the Automata"
"—You're kidding? It was as good as 10 soldiers, you know?"
"He used strange words and a shining magic item. I'll examine more closely later"
"You have other work to do besides that, right?"
"Understood. I will put the study of the 'bugs' at the highest priority…"
"I didn't mean that"
Glenn approached Nikka with a brisk pace, forcibly pulled her towards himself,

and took her lips.
Nikka let leak a “Hnnn….” sound, but finally surrendered herself to Glenn’s tongue play.

“Your love to me is your maximum priority job. You promised that we’ll kiss in exchange for greetings, didn’t you?” …. the ‘bugs’ go after that”
“Yes, Glenn-sama… it’s as you say. But please let me finish the ‘bugs’ even a moment sooner”
Nikka tightly hugged Glenn’s hand that was caressing her body.
“Using Princess Rosé, making you Hero—. All that is my love…”

“♪hmhmhm~, hm hm—”
In the kitchen, Arina was in high spirits.
She handled the chicken well and had dipped it in boiling water.
In the meantime, she boiled an asparagus-like stalked plant in another pot.

“♪Even without soy sauce, even without dashi! Make it delicious, with ingenuity!”
Singing with whatever-works rhythm and random lyrics, Arina continued her cooking as she danced.
She crushed rock salt with a hammer, added and concentrated flavoring, and made sauce. Not forgetting to add a dash of flour to give it thickness.

The kitchen was occupied by Arina alone.
Just now the food for the four residents and guest of the residence was ready, and the other maids went to deliver them.
The newbie Arina announced that she will clean up the kitchen and used that time to make food.

“♪Love Yuu-kun just wait for it! I’ll make a delicious dinner!”

“W, wait a minute, what are you doing!”
A maid who came back early yelled.
“Don’t use the ingredients on your owEEEEK!”
A food preparation knife grazed her cheek and *SCHING*! pinned itself on the wall.
“I’m so–rry. My hand slipped–,” Arina said and continued cooking.
“Look here, you!”
“Don’t, there’s something wrong with that girl”

The maid still didn't relax her protests, but another maid came and stopped her.
"But senpai fainted and didn't wake up, so you should just get out of the way"

Please do just that, you pigs.
I'm preparing dinner for your future master right now.

As she muttered that, Arina cut the chicken apart.
She briskly made chicken skin and oil into soup, and thigh and breast meat into steak.

It's about time for Tris to come in with a weird face soon, I guess?
I have to speed this up.

While making the calculations she arranged the food on dishes.
Chicken for the main course, and ohitashi for the sides.
Pour the sauce…. but before that.
Talking about the last seasoning, it has to be this.

"Yuu-kun! Love love LOVE！A･I･SHI･TE･RU！chuu☆"

She lovingly kissed the chicken and poured the sauce once again.

Arina *did* notice the maids looking at the spectacle, looking more and more scared, but they don't matter.
As the food was finally done, Tris showed up.

"Oi! You lot! Get some food ready for the guests right now! I know it's too unreasonable but Madam—"
"Yeees! It's do–ne!!"
"—huh?"
Toward the actions of Arina that can only be described as foresight, everyone besides her became astonished.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 16 – The Madam's Misunderstanding is Arina's Hand

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/09/10/orejimi-16/

(※ Several tens of minutes before Tris went in the kitchen)

By the time Lady Demy's sobbing stopped, the sun had already gone a good way down.

Because the Isky residence was dark for being surrounded by groves of tall trees, it becomes totally dark once night fell.

"Ah"

When I opened the E:ID phone to put the handkerchief back, I noticed a notification appearing on the screen.
"…What's the matter?" said Lady Demy.
The traces of her tears still wasn't gone.
"My level went up"
"*Level*… ?"
"Yes, somehow this thing manages my strength and stuff"

Name: Shimoyama Yuuki
Job: Princess' Lover
Lv: 2
HP: 120 MP: 60%
STR: 7 SPD: 7 INT: 4 LUK: 0

It probably notified me that my level went up after defeating the armor, but because of this and that I didn't notice.
"Seriously, doesn't my luck get any room to rise?"
As I mumbled, Lady Demy curiously peered into the screen.
"… I've never seen these letters before"
I see.
Even though words can get through, it doesn't mean writing does…
"It's my world's writing," I explained, then Lady Demy became more interested.

“These two angular-shaped letters, are they Yuuki-san’s name?”
“No, those letters say ‘name’. The ones following after that is my name”
“This… fishhook-like letter?”
Fishhook…?
Ah, the letter “shi”. «TN: ∪»
“Yes, the four letters are my surname. Like the ‘Merry’ part in Lady Demy’s name”
“Oooh, the family name comes first”
“Yes, Shi, mo, ya, ma. The next ones are my given name. Yu, u, ki”
Explaining kanji and katakana will just confuse her so I’ll stop here.
“Yu–u–ki”
Lady Demy wrote hiragana in the air several times with a happy face.
“Fufu. I’ll end up remembering if it’s just this much”
She said that with an ‘I’m not letting go of you’ nuance somehow, it’s a little scary.
But it’s good that she got her cheerfulness back.

Anyway, I put the handkerchief away and took out something else.

First, pocket tissue.
Have to get Lady Demy’s nose clean.
Eye drops for her weeping eyes.
Lady Demy was surprised at how it’s used, but thanks to it the traces of her tears were gone.
But wow, to think I even had eye drops. I think I was thinking about Arina when I stuffed things in my backpack.
As for the worrying dirt on her dress, wiping it with wet tissue cleared it away.
“Lastly, Lady Demy. The usual way of speaking,” I said, then Lady Demy took two-three deep breaths
“I know without you having to say it. Watch your mouth,” she said as she faced forwards.

All right. She’s back.

Now we magnificently returned to the Isky residence.
“—Good performance, Yuuki. You’re the best ‘attendant'”
“It’s my honour to receive such praise”

I made a half-joking answer as I tidied up the tools into the E:ID phone.
I saw the 'Knight's Sword' in the Items column.
—It got properly retrieved in the middle of the confusion.
"Don't worry. I'll manage something somehow," I said intended for the knights.

We went through the door where we met the maids the first time and entered the residence.
"Ojousama, we have been waiting"
Immediately, Tris came to meet us with a smile on his face.
"I'm told you went to the chapel but I was worried because you were returning late. We have prepared dinner. Marquis Isky is looking forward to dinner with you"
He then called a maid over and had her take Lady Demy there.
Tris made a deep bow until Lady Demy was gone, but….

He got angry with me for some reason.
"What, I didn't do anything!"
"That's exactly the problem! It's important as an attendant to be faithful to your master's orders, but you have to smoothly suggest their next move! It's outrageous that you've made ojousama late for dinner!"
…. What's with the impossible game.
"No, but, Ojousama said she wanted to go"
"NO BUTS! This is why uneducated servants are so—"

"S, stop it Tris!"

The one who stopped Tris' spittly lecture was none other than Madam Welsh.
"What are you saying to our guest's attendant!"
"Ha…. no, but, this person is"
"Enough already, stand down!"
Tris looked at me with a really bewildered face, but I myself don't understand what's happening.
Madam Welsh turned a creepy smile my way.
"Y, Yuuki-san, my subordinate earlier, um, did something a bit hasty, so, I'm very sorry"
"…….. o, ok"
What's she talking about?

I didn't get it and just threw in appropriate responses.
"It was a little bit of a mistake, or maybe misunderstanding, but I had no intent to do something like that in the least, yes, really! Please do not misunderstand…!"

What's with this old lady.
What misunderstanding?

Ah.
Maybe it's about that armor monster?
If that's the case then I'm the one who should apologise. It was me who destroyed it no matter the reason.

"No, sorry. I guess I overdid it a little…. Can it be fixed?"
" 'It'…, 'fixed' —!?"
"Ah. If you need help cleaning it up please say so. I'll stuff it in my baggage and throw it away somewhere"
" 'clean up' !? 'stuff it in luggage' !? 'throw it somewhere' !?"

What the.
The old lady is getting more and more pale the more I speak.

"W, w, we will handle the disposal. Yuuki-san, doesn't need to be too worried about it—, o, ohoho, ohohohoho"
"Ah. I see"
Aww, I stingily thought I could secretly [make it into my armor].
This is a fantasy world and I don't even have a shield or helmet, you see.
Even if full armor is a high hurdle to pass.

"I hoped I could at least get an arm"

"E, eek!"

Ah, this is bad.
My heart's voice leaked out.
I shouldn't speak to myself. Gotta be careful.
"…… hm?"
Why's the old lady looking like she's meeting the Grim Reaper?
"Madam, what's wrong? … you look a bit unwell"
Tris who had been silent came over to see.

“Tris”
“Yes!”
“Prepare a guest dinner for Yuuki”
“Yes, immediate—, huh!?”

Ooh.
This time it’s Tris’ face that turned pale.

“Hahaha, t, that’s a good jo…”
“This is not a joke, go, NOW. He can’t share a table with the Marquis so prepare a private room. Prepare maids properly as well. After that also get a bath ready.”
“B, bath!? For this lowly manwhore, lowest of the low, who’s not even a knight, much less a noble!?”
“W w w w watch your mouth! You fool, don’t be absurd!!”
“Huuuuh!?”

Tris became confused!

“Madam, what in the world are you thinking!?”
“You talk back too much!! If you value your life, hurry up and get things ready!”
“Y, yes, I’ll go!!”
Tris dashed away with a speed that made a pyuuun sound effect.

“Fufufu, we’ll give you our best hospitality, so, um, please relax during your stay”

Madam Welsh turned her not quite describable eerie smile at me.
Then it abruptly changed into a frantic expression.

“Therefore I beseech you! Please do not bear me any ill will!”

She strongly implored me as if praying to some great evil god.

Somehow she seems just like an old lady straight out of Village of Eight Gravestones.
I don’t really get what’s happening so I blankly stood there while thinking things like that.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 17 – The Three Girls

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/09/12/orejimi-17/

It was a room with chandeliers hanging, like a hotel's ballroom.
Along the walls engraved with carvings that give off a high-class feels were wagons filled with cooking, and three maids reverently stood with their hands in front of them.
The appetite-stimulating aroma of food drifted about.
In the middle of the room there was a table for ten covered with white cloth, and seated on the seat of honor there was a single stupid-faced high-schooler.

Yep, that's me.

"Preposterous…! This is preposterous…!"
Tris grit his teeth in frustration and looked at me with eyes filled with malice.
"Why do I have to treat the likes of you like this!"
"Well, I said I don't know already. If you have complaints say it to Madam"
He can't say it anyway.
"Damn this! Whatever, I'll leave his reception to you"

""" Yes, Tris-sama """

The maids answered Tris in unison.
"Hmph!"
SLAM! Tris closed the door and left, looking dissatisfied.
Even if you let it out on me….
Well honestly, it's not something to be worried about being hated by him, so let's first enjoy the meal.

The maids started laying out the food…. wait, they're not?
They were watching to see the situation outside
"He's gone?"
"He's gone, right"
"Yep, he's gone"
They reported to each other, and then…

They simultaneously looked at me.

grin, they sent me inquisitive smiles and swarmed at me with great vigor.

“Hey hey, what’s your name?”
“Why are you being treated like a guest?”
“How far have you gone with Lady Demy?”
“Ah, that that, that’s important!”
“Kyaah! We wanna know!!”
The maids barraged me with questions.
“Wa…, wait a minute!! Everyone calm down!”
“This girl said Lady Demy is Princess Rosé. She’s definitely not, right?”
“Eeeh, but they look similar…. Don’t they?”
“Princess Rosé doing ‘*something like that*‘ is too shocking. No way”
“Anyway, does this guy know?”
“Ah. I see, I guess her lover won’t say”
“Eh, I dunno. Since he’s being treated like a guest and all, he might actually be a noble even though he looks like this…”
“Eeh, no way, he doesn’t have the aura at all”

These girls are hopeless, even though they’re the ones asking questions they never planned to listen to me at all….
As the story develops and somehow the strange idea that I came down from the end of the sky came about (not entirely wrong, though…), I worked out a plan to shut them up and put it into action.

“Ah. It’s Tris!”

“!?” “!?” “!?”
In one shot the shadow of death loomed on them all and they froze. They seemed really scared.
“I lied. It’s alright, he’s not coming”
“Once I said that their pale expressions turned into relaxed ones”
“One person asking questions at a time, please. I’m not Shoutoku Taisho”
“Shoutoku?”
Ah, right, they don’t know.
“Anyway, I’ll answer so ask calmly”
When I said that the maids…

“… this is somehow…”

“If you tell us to be formal…”
“Humm”

“I felt like I’ve broken the good mood somehow”
The calmed-down maids for now started laying out my food.
“Hey, is this my fault”
“Naah, I guess it’s not”
“But how should I say”
“Momentum is important”
“Ah. Yes, that”
Girls sure like to act as they please in times like these.
“Alright. Let’s start from self-introduction then. I’m Yuuki. My job is Ojousama’s attendant”
“His job’s her attendant he says”
“Noooo”
“Giggity”
“Stop giggling!”
It’s embarrassing like I thought….
“I’m Mist. Nice to meet you, attendant-san”
Mist said while arranging the knife and fork.
“I’m Haibo, I’m the one who showed you to your room, see”
Haibo introduced herself as she laid out the soup.
“Ah, the one who got scolded for peeping…”
“Uuh! You knew the whole time!”
“You’re the one who were listening in, weren’t you. The perpetrator shouldn’t get angry at the victim”
“You’re really mean, aren’t you…”
Sullen, Haibo stepped back.
The last maid laid out the bread.
“I’m Twys. Let me ask you stuff, kay”
She made a wide grin.
You’re the most curious one, huh….

The three girls who had gotten used to the job briskly finished preparing my dinner.

Okay, let's ea–t…. wait.
It's hard to eat if the girls are just standing there in line.
"You're not going to eat?"
"Eh. We can't"
"You're still a guest"
Hmmm. Even if you say so….
I'll be too tense I won't be able to taste the food.
Well, since there seems to be a lot of bread….
"Isn't it fine? Let's eat together"
The three of them looked at each other in silent conference.
"…….. in that case"
"Let's do just that!"
"Ufufu. It's been years since I've eaten with a boy!"

At a room inside the underground passage.

After Glenn went out to eat, Nikka who's left behind was immersed in some kind of experiment.
She mixed some glowing drug into a test tube, heated it, then poured it into a beaker.
Inside the beaker there were scores of mosquito larva looking needle-shaped creatures wriggling around.
They were the '*bugs*'.
Nikka spoke something to a small magic core and sank it in there.
The bugs swarmed at it and the magic core turned a poisonous purple hue.
Looking at that, Nikka made a satisfied smile but that smile immediately turned into a frown.

She stopped the fire, turned the lights out and hurriedly went outside.
Nikka turned towards the door and chanted,
"'*Darkness*'"
Somehow the entry door turned into the same stone as the other walls.
Without turning on the lights, Nikka ran through the passage. The passage Yuuki ran across was only a very small part, these passages ran throughout the entire premises.
It became tangled like a maze, if you entered without a map or have one

memorized in your head you'd easily get lost.

Nikka's movements were the latter, she ran to her destination without being lost.
There was a dropped lantern in her line of sight. Then an automaton apprehending a single maid.

She's a maid that's been working here since long ago.
She fell on her behind, unmoving, startled by the armor's blade.
She was carrying some kind of baggage on her back.

Nikka took a breath just before the scene of the crime and put on a clergywoman's dignity.
"What are you doing there?"
She rebuked the maid.
"U, uu, ummm"
She seems to have fallen into panic.
The maid responded in an unintelligible voice.

"Entry is forbidden here"
"U, umm, I, I, I"
"This leads to the shrine's sacred ground. You heard from Glenn-sama, didn't you?"
"I, I, I, the chicken"
"You cannot continue on from here. I won't ask anything so go back to the residence"
"T, t t, the chicken…"
No matter what she said the maid didn't seem to settle down and Nikka's expression became more and more irritated.
"It's alright already, stand up…"
"The chicken's head…"
"Huuh?"
The maid is acting strange.
She wasn't just scared of the armor.
"T, t, the chicken's head, plucked off, that girl. Chicken, I, the chicken like that"
The maid's breathing became rougher.
There was sweat on her forehead.

“What’s wrong? What’s this about a chicken?”

Nikka didn’t know.
She was the maid who ordered Arina to slaughter the chicken and fainted seeing her method.

The maid continued, frothing at the mouth.
“T t t t, the chicken, I, I killed lots of chickens, but, that, not like that, blood don’t fly like that, but that girl, she pulled the chicken’s head, then she crushed the head, crunch, crunch….”
“———……”
This is not normal. The panic caught onto Nikka.
The maid continued her unintelligible talk and finally started hyperventilating.
“Hi–i…. after the chicken there’s the pighii, after the pig there’s the cowhii, hii, after the cow, after that, you have to listen…. Uuu, I said, I said!”

“….. who is ‘that girl’?”
Nikka questioned her.
The maid then answered.

“That girl? Arina-chan, was it?”
“Ah–. I was wondering if she’s alright”
The girls said something like that.

While having my meal I had gotten friendly with the three girls, we talked to each other about whatever’s on our mind.
It started with talk about Ojousama’s ero-scene so it seems that her shame was not in vain.
Of course, I intended to talk about the spies but right now I was talking about small topics.
I thought that so I tried asking about Arina.
“What, what’s wrong?”
They made a grim face and I felt uneasy.
“Rather than wrong…”
“The kitchen group she got assigned to, has an intense pecking order, or rather newbie bullying…”
“N…. newbie bullying?”
“Ah, just a little. Well, you see, she looks a bit timid”

“Also, rumor says the head maid there is quite a nasty one”
“Now that you mentioned it, there were some girls who got injured”
“Wait, stop it. Yuuki’s looking anxious”
“……..”

I am anxious.

When I saw her earlier she looks fine so I was relieved, but….
I guess they saw something in my facial expression.
Mist said,
“It’s fine. We’ll keep an eye on her”
She tried to encourage me, but….—,

I hope her past trauma doesn’t come back to her….

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 18 – Two Insanities and Favorites

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/09/30/orejimi-18/

Nikka's breathing was rough as she escaped through the dark underground passage.

What was that, what happened, what is it!

It began when the automata sensed something and she raised her spear.
"*IT'S HER — NOOOO! IT'S ARINA!*"
As the maid screamed, the automata fell to pieces.
A young girl stepped down on the wreckage.
Her figure was that of a braided young girl in an apron dress, but from the killing intent she emanates, her madness, her brutality, and her indescribable negative vibes, she looked like a monster to Nikka.

Then she looked towards her and grinned.
"Sister-sama, I am in need of your guidance. — not"

So she was aiming for me!

I'll be killed if I don't do something quick. Having understood that by instinct, she fought back with another automata nearby.

From the state the first one is in, the second one probably won't be worth much more than a diversion.
She hid herself in the labyrinthine underground passage.

Even if that monster called Arina got hold of a map, she won't be able to move faster than herself who knew these passages by heart.
If all goes well, she would rot away in this maze.
Nikka pressed several buttons along the passageways as she fled.
BRRRRR, the sound of grinding rocks echoed. These passages were originally made to shake off pursuers, so it was laid out with the capability to changing the layout of the walls.

How's that, you can't come for me now. She gloated, but then…

Boom.

“….?”
There was a sound from far away.
Boom, Wham.
Nikka stopped and strained her ears.
BAM, BAM, BAM!
Those weren’t the sounds of the passages changing.
What’s more, they — CRASSH — were definitely coming closer —.

“! No way!”

KABLAAAAAM!!

The stone wall next to Nikka collapsed.

“Sister-samaa, isn’t it too cruel of you to leave a lost lamb alone?”

Her voice came from behind the cloud of dust.
Maps and wall layouts are useless and meaningless to her.
“How absurd!”
She protested towards the voice and continued to run, for now.

“It’s because sister-sama ran awaaay. Please listen to Arina’s troubles”
BOOOM!
The wall in front of her collapsed.
Nikka turned around towards the next route
“There’s this person Arina likes. Like like Arina loves him so much it hurts just thinking about him. But even though he knows how Arina feels he doesn’t respond at all!”
BOOOOOM!!
The wall beside her collapsed, and she ran faster.
“Eeeeeh! What should I do!?”
“The heavens say thus! [To love one another so that others shall love thee in return]!”
“But but but! That person is the only one I like!!”
BOOOOM!
Another wall collapsed behind her.
“It is also written thus! [What thou wanteth thou shalt give. Want the joy of giving]!”

“Does god love puzzles!? Arina doesn’t understand!”
BOOOM!!
Another wall collapsed right in front of her eyes.
“Please stop! The residence is going to sink!”
“Eeeeh! But but..!!”

“Kidding. I don’t care!”
Arina swiftly switched to a cold tone.

Then

……——.

“……?”

The sound of destruction was no more.
Silence suddenly fell and she became more uneasy.
She can’t sense her.
Where… where is she?

……——.

Where is she…?

” ‘Lamp‘ !”
Nikka chanted and the passages became bright.
There was rubble here and there, only the clear evidence of that girl’s rampage.
However…. there’s no sign of her.

Nikka slowly walked forward.
She can’t afford to be rash.
However… she was really not there.
Did she disappear?

Did she… return?

The moment she felt relieved…
FWIP
“Hauu!?”
Nikka’s hair was pulled towards a wall.
Something strong gripped her hair and forcibly pulled her.

It was an arm.
The wall grew an arm!

"No, no, — NOOOOOOO!!"
Even the stout-hearted Nikka would scream in such an unknown situation.
The wall grew another arm and mercilessly grabbed Nikka's arm.
What are they pulling me for.
Are they dragging me to hell. Her heart was caught in a vortex of fear.
"STOP! LET GO!! He, hel, HEEEEEELP!!"

"Arina actually doesn't care whether Yuu-kun looks at Arina or not"

Arina came along from the passage.
More and more arms appeared, wrapping Nikka's legs and body, but Arina keeps talking about an entirely unrelated topic.
"Arina feels a bit lonely, to be honest, but it's really a trivial thing"
"NOOO, what is this! Let go, LET GOOO!!!"
The arms superbly adjusted their strength, loosening when she resisted, but quickly capturing her again when she was about to escape.
Letting her escape. Catching her.
Now she can escape. Now she can't.
It was many times more distressing than just being caught.
"NOOOOO! Let go!!"
"After all, Arina was born to serve Yuu-kun. Arina will give Yuu-kun what he wants, Arina wants to give Yuu-kun more than he wants. Arina never talked to god about this. That's because Arina's god is Yuu-kun. Fufufufu. Yuu-kun, I love you!"

Is that something you'd say in a situation like this! "Y… you're crazy!"
Nikka roared at her while she was trying to escape.

"This Yuu-kun person is a sinner! A demon calling himself god!"

"……
……
…… huh?"

Arina's eyes transformed from those of a girl in love to the eyes of a murdering maniac.

“———”

Nikka’s heart froze just by looking at those eyes, her body stopped resisting the arms.

I said something I shouldn’t have said.

Nikka’s survival instincts realized.

Arina calmly, with burning rage, swayed as she said…

“What did you say about Yuu-kun just now?” she asked as she slowly came close.

“——……”

No voice came out.

“Hey”

“——……, ah, ah”

“Huh?”

“——, S, s……, sin”

“I SAID WHAT DID YOU SAY YOU WORTHLESS BIIIIIIIIIIITCH[1]!!” [1] «TN: ‘ama’ can mean ether nun/bhikkuni (尼) or bitch (阿魔)»

KABLAAAAAAM!!

The wall restraining Nikka was destroyed with Arina’s punch.

Despite the blow missing her, Nikka’s body was pushed away and she fell on the floor behind the wall.

I’m dead.

I’m done for. She was unable to move her body, not even to run away.

“How dare you insult Yuu-kun. How dare you. HOW DARE A DAMNED PIECE OF ※※※ LIKE YOU SAY THAT ABOUT YUU-KUN…”

Arina, Terror, came to her.

It was the same anger of when a pagan slanders her own god.

“So, how do you want to die? Roasting dogeza? Iron maiden? …. Ah, that’s right”

Arina gripped the shivering Nikka’s collar and lifted her high overhead with her superhuman strength.

“Uu…” Nikka became nauseous, but Arina paid her no mind.

“I think I’ll pay sister-sama back for Yuu-kun being slapped. It was your fault

Demy slapped him, right”
Nikka suddenly realized.
This ‘Yuu-kun’ she was talking about refers to that servant.
Why does this woman worship an ordinary person like him… it was too late to think about.
“Hey c’mon, clench your teeth, just so you know it doesn’t mean anything”
A slap from a monster that could destroy walls.
It’s meaningless no matter how much she braced for it.
I’m dead. I’ll have my head smashed and killed. Nikkaps tears spilled and she sobbed.

“Hic… G… Glenn-sama…”
With death right before her eyes, she unintentionally let leak the name of the one she loved, then suddenly…

“…, Glenn?”
Arina reacted to that.

“No, you’re wrong!”
“I don’t think I’m wrong. Heeh, so it’s Glenn”
Nikka was released from Arina’s hands.
THUD, Nikka fell to the floor.
“I finally figured out what you’re doing here. You shut yourself in this underground passage and develop a drug for him to manipulate the Princess, right?”

—— How much does she know!?

“You’re dirtying your hands to raise that disgusting man into a hero. Just how far do you plan on sacrificing human lives? How dumb”
“I owe Glenn-sama my life! He’s way more fitting for a hero than your ‘Yuu-kun’!”
Nikka yelled loudly.
Arina looked down at her with piercing eyesight.
But Nikka didn’t stop.
“Kill me if you want! The last thing I want is to cause trouble for him!”

She hadn’t told her everything to the end. If she died, at least the secret of the

‘bugs’ would be protected.

Don’t ever think my feelings will lose to yours!

Arina looked down at Nikka with cold eyes, then she said a single word.

“Pitiful”

“…”

Say whatever you like. “But I like you. Fine, I’ll give you a chance before I kill you. I’ll let you help that ‘Hero’-sama of yours”

“What are you… Kyaah!!”

She was grabbed by a mystery arm.

Without any room to resist, Nikka was dragged down into a deep abyss.

⇐ *Previous* | *TOC* | *Next* ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 19 – Bathroom Seduction

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/09/30/orejimi-19/

Tris walked indignantly through the residence.
“Good grief, what is she thinking!”
He was angry about Lady Demy’s lowly attendant being given a high-class meal and even a bath.
He’s never heard of such absurd treatment.
…. Furthermore, because the food given to that boy to eat was more expensive than his own, Tris became more offended.
Unable to stomach his anger, Tris tattled about it to Glenn before he had dinner.
And what did he say in response?
The Marquis’ son Glenn smiled and said this.

[It’s fine. Send the maids in when he’s bathing, as well]

[Huuuuuuuuuuh!?]
Tris screamed.
Since when was this residence reduced to a brothel.
Not only the whimsical and temperamental Madam Welsh, but even the ambitious Glenn was like this, what the hell just happened.
Whatever, I won’t ask why.
It’s impossible anyway. [Even if they’re maids, we didn’t employ girls who’d easily obey an order like that]
[What, this is important. …. got it?]
Hearing the plans whispered to him, Tris became more confused.
He knew about the ‘bugs’.
But he didn’t expect they’ll be used like this.

“Eei, I don’t know the reason why we had to go that far just for that man!”
He was indignant but he serves the Iskies.
He should separate his work and his personal feelings.
“Oi, you lot!”
Entering the room where Yuuki ate, he called the three maids who were in the middle of tidying things up.

They seemed to notice his irritation and responded to him in fear.
“Where is Yuuki-dono?”
“He’s already gone to the bath…”
“Good then. Get someone else to tidy up, you lot get in the bath and entertain that man”
As he said so, the maids looked at each other and became troubled over their order.

“Umm?”
“Do you mean, um..”
“You’re telling us to go in the bath with him?”

As expected, they responded with bewildered expressions.
“That’s right. Don’t make me explain any more. It’s getting on my nerves!”
“But, but!”
“That’s a little bit…”
“Yeah”
This is also expected.
There’s no way girls of age would readily respond to that order with yes, understood, we’ll be going.
Tris took a deep breath and took out a small bottle from his pocket.
“I don’t care anymore. If you have complaints say it to Madam or Glenn-sama”

Led by the maids, I reached the bathroom.
There are several bathrooms in the residence, five of them for use by guests.
It seems they calculated one tub assigned to each guest.
Which reminds me, this is a medieval Europe style fantasy but they have baths.
Well, in our world baths have been in use since Ancient Greece and Rome so they probably didn’t fall out of use and were still used in this world.
I entered the room. The place they call the dressing room is only slightly partitioned, it can already be called the bathroom itself.
Behind the steam, I can see several statues like in the chapel lined up.
The room’s size was about half a gymnasium, the bath itself was unexpectedly snug.
It was surrounded by stone walls on all four sides but the roof is left open like an open-air bath.

The starry sky looks really pretty. …. but I wonder what happens if it rains.
To make up for the small tub, there was a large bed made of marble. It contained a device that makes water constantly flow to not allow the user's body to cool.
That's a stand for when you 'get' your body cleaned.
The maids who showed me here said this.
[You wanted to go to the bath, but don't you need an assistant?]
[Eh? I'm an assistant]
[Yeah… you're right. But who's going to clean your body then?]

Our intuition would say we wash by scrubbing ourselves, but here it seems it's the attendant's job to wash the master's body with oil.
I guess it's something like a massage. I see, I kinda understand the reason why they treat me like a prostitute. Everyone thinks that Lady Demy and I go to baths together….

—nononononono wait a minute.

Seriously, what position did Lady Demy put me on.
Actually, what's she planning to do about today's bath. Am I finally getting the chance to fondle a princess' body?

Uhyooo!
I'm getting nervous if I may say so myself!

…… well, she'll probably end up borrowing one of the residence's maids.

I shed off the wild delusions together with my clothes, putting them in the E:ID phone. In exchange, I took out a towel.
I did get a piece of hemp cloth for use as a bath towel but wiping my body with this will get me painful splinters.
I wonder if it's okay to take my smartphone off?
….. It looked waterproof and it's been turned into a magic item so I don't think it's going to break even if I got water on it.
Just in case, I took it off and put it nearby.

I put the smartphone inside a wooden bucket and picked up another to wash myself in the tub.

"Phew…."

It was just the right temperature. I let out a sigh.
Baths are surely good.
The bath-loving factor carved inside my Japanese DNA jumped in joy.

Aaah.
Thinking about it, this had been a long day.

Remembering from when I was at the school closing ceremony, I found out that Arina was some hero, then somehow got thrown into this world.
When I came here I fought wolf monsters and zombies, met Princess Rosé, and before I knew it I was helping uncover Marquis Isky's plan.

Seriously, you never know what life brings.
In the end I wasn't able to get any information from the three maid girls, the only thing suspicious is that underground passage….
I should exchange information with Arina after the bath. I hope she isn't getting bullied….

"…. That's right. Today was Arina's birthday…"
I somehow missed the chance to get her a proper present…. I did give her a lock of hair though.
Now that we're here I can't let it end by choosing something off-hand like that.
This is what I get for saying I can do it whenever and not preparing properly.
I wonder what should I do….—, hm?

Creak….. the door opened.
Behind the partition.
"How is the bath water?"
This voice is Mist's…. one of the three maid girls earlier. She didn't have to even go so far as helping me to the bath.
In order to hide my body, my back was turned towards the entrance.
"It's fine. Thanks"
I replied.
"Is that so. Good then"

Click.
I heard the door close. She seems to have left.
She just came around to check the water temperature, did she?

How do they heat this water, I wonder.
Do they have a water heater like that magic kettle?
Hm…, well, it doesn't matter.

Splash….

"—It's true, the water's good♪"
"Hm?"
I saw a slender leg next to me.
I followed it and saw a small belly button, then two bulges, delicate shoulders….
and then….
"May I join you?"
Mist's smiling face.
"Wait, eh, —UWAAAAAAAH!!"
What, eh, what!?
Why did she enter the bathroom naked!?
Well, yeah, you do enter bathrooms naked, but…!!
Anyway, I escaped to the other end of the tub.
What's happening, what should I do!?
I fell into panic.
"You two–! Hurry up and come here–!"
The situation was getting worse.
"" Ye–s! ""
That was Haibo and Twys.
Why did they enter the bathroom naked!?
Well, yeah, you do enter bathrooms naked, but..!!
Blood rushed to my head and I felt that peculiar dull pain. My head became clouded and my judgement hazy.
Anyway, escape from the bath for now!
"Ah, do you want me to wash your back?"
One of the three girls offered.
"N, n, n, no! You don't need to wash me!! Meido eunt domus[1]!! Wait, English!!
Why did I just retort to myself!! Uwaaaaaaaah!!"

I · Don't · Know · Anymore · !

"Ahaha, Yuuki, that's a surprise"

“I thought you had more experience with Ojousama”
“Right”
The three smiled just like when we were chatting over dinner. That is… stark naked as the day they’re born, without a swimsuit or bathrobe or even a bath towel.
Not even I can leave my nether regions exposed without a bath towel covering it you know!!
“Hey hey hey, why is everyone in the bath!? What do you want with me!?”
“Don’t say what do you want with me”
Mist said while stroking her hair.
Clad with moisture, beads of water streamed down her body, the light glinting off it emphasizing her body’s lines.
She had long hair and her bangs are cut to even length.
This ‘normal girl’ is sitting there naked.
“We fell in love with Yuuki, so, we wanted to make Yuuki happy”
Haibo had a pair of smallish busts.
She had the youngest appearance of the three, but it suits her energetic self well. Her nude body had a forbidden charm to it.
“Rather, we’re the ones who should be saying ‘what do you want to do with us‘, no?”
Twys turned me an inquisitive smile. So this is what they call ‘amazing body once she takes her clothes off’. It was exactly the fact that she looked slender in clothing that made the gap with what’s inside more amazing. Anyhow, now that she’s soaking in the tub, buoyancy did its work making her bulges quiver.

—Hold it!
What am I doing, calmly analyzing them!
“T, this is weird isn’t it! How did I get a surprise harem! What is this, a trap! This must be a blackmail trick, isn’t it!”
“Gaaah. The shock”
“Even though we’ve seriously fallen in love with Yuuki”
“Even though we wanted you to teach us lots of things”
“Ah. But Yuuki might unexpectedly not know anything”
“Maybe, looking at how he panicked”
“Eh. So he’s a virgin?”

“Ahaha”
….. what the?
What the?
Was I the one who couldn’t read the mood again?

“Come over here. You’ll get cold like that”
Mist beckoned me over and I did as she said and returned to the tub.
Haibo and Twys then immediately clung to me from both sides.
—I have no escape route in sight….

My heartbeat is getting dangerous.
When I was with Lady Demy we were both acting and had a goal to deliberately show off an ‘indecent’ feeling so I was able to maintain my pace.
But now that they’re not feeling indecent at all making me feel like I’m ‘allowed’, I’m at a loss as to what to do.

“Ah, Yuuki turned red”
“Ahaha, so cute”
“N, no, I’m just feeling flushed”
“Really? You’re flushed?”
“Fufu. You can’t help turning red then”
Damn this, they saw through me.
“……”
I accept my loss. I’ll stay silent now.
I feel like I’m going to embarrass myself if I open my mouth anymore.
“Oh? Now you’re silent”
“Too much stimulation after all?”
“But Yuuki said something like playing back in the chapel, right?”
“He was probably doing his best there”
“……..”
“……..”
“……..”

——…….

One by one the three girls fell silent.
Only the splish-splash sound of Haibo playing with the water surface can be heard in the bath.

“Hey, Yuuki, say something”
Mist said, unable to stand the silence.
“….. sorry. It’s a bit too much”
“Okay, then”

“Wanna touch?”

“Ee——!?”
The three girls made a line, pressing their bodies against each other.
“It’s okay if it’s Yuuki”
“Me too”
“Hey, which one do you want first?”
If I stretched out my hand I will find the soft body of the opposite sex.
The treasure of the dreams of any boy in puberty is waiting for me behind the steam.
This…. is really okay, is it?

“—It’s okay. We’ll keep it a secret from Lady Demy”
Mist said.
She’s right.
There’s no reason to refuse.
This moment, the three girls are mine—

“—Sorry. I… can’t do it after all”

I pulled back the hand I was just stretching out.
The three girls showed me astonished looks.
“Are we… that charmless?” said Twys.
“No. You’re all really pretty. My heart pounds when looking at you”
“So why?”
“You can do anything you like you know?”
“……..”
“I see” said Mist.
“You have somebody else you like”
“….. not ‘like’ like, but”
If I fooled around with them here, even if we keep it a secret….

“——I do have somebody I can’t betray”

How could I look Arina in the face?
That girl adores me with all her heart and I don't even respond to that, so how can I look her in the face.
Can I forgive myself if I got carried away here…?
"A loser's mentality, huh"
Haibo laughed.
I think the same way too.
"Aah. Too bad"
"Sheesh, you're way too honest"
"I know that I'm a big disappointment myself"
"Really, a coward"
Everyone voiced their complaints, but it settled without the atmosphere becoming awkward.
"Alright, so be it. Look's like it's no good to let Yuuki take the lead. This time we're going to, —HEKCHEE!!"
Mist sneezed.
"Are you okay? Aren't you the one feeling cold?"
"Yeah, I'm all—HEKCHEE!! He, he…. HEKCHEE!!"
So she's the type that can't stop sneezing, is she?
People do sneeze in their own ways.
"HEKCHEE… He, HEKCHEE! uu, he, HEKCHEE!!"
—No, this isn't normal!
"O, oi!"
Mist's sneezing isn't showing any signs of stopping.
"HEKCHEE! …. Uuh, UEEEEEE!! Cough!! Cough cough!!"
She fell on all fours and started having an agonizing coughing fit.
"Are you alright!? Get a hold of yourself!!"
I was about to rub her back…. aah, I can't she's naked now, I can't touch her!
"Haibo, rub the back!"
"…. Eh? Why?"
Haibo looked at me blankly.
"Doesn't that look like suffering to you?"
"But you don't look like you're suffering"
"Huh!?"

“Hey, tell us about Lady Demy. Every single juicy bit”
Even Twys said something so carefree. Meanwhile, Mist continued to cough like she’s choking.
“Aren’t you guys friends!? Damn!”
I can’t worry about appearances anymore.
I rubbed Mist back in order to ease her suffering a little.
“Cough, Cough cough, u……!”
“If you feel like vomiting, vomit it out! It’ll make you feel better!”
“Ugeeeh…. eeee!”
Mist covered her mouth and looked at the sky.

“OEEEEEEEEE!!”

She vomited all over the floor.
That moment something slipped out of her mouth.

A slug-like soft-bodied creature.

It’s not something you’d see coming out of a person’s mouth.
“What the hell is that…”
While I was being surprised, whatever that thing was jumped and ran away with incredible speed.
“KYAAAAAAAA!!”
Suddenly Mist screamed.
She then hugged herself.
“Why am I naked!? This, the bath!?”
“What are you talking about….”
“NOOOOOO, don’t look, don’t come!!”
W, ….. what just happened.
She’s like a totally different person!
“What am I doing!? Why are we… ——what’s that?”

Slitherslitherslitherslither…..

The water level in the tub receded and something blocked the moonlight.
I turned my head. What I saw there was an enlarged slug slithering its tentacles.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 20 – One I Can't Betray

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/09/30/orejimi-20/

It was when Yuuki and Arina were in grade school.
For Arina, who is often bullied and cried, Yuuki was the only one she could call a friend.
Yuuki spent his days worrying about her.
……. One day, after school.
Yuuki witnessed Arina walking intimately with several classmates.

That's rare. He felt something out of place, but…

"So she found some friends other than me. Good for you, Arina"
Yuuki muttered and went back home alone.

The giant slug whose length passed three meters long wriggled its vertical body forward.

I grabbed the E:ID phone and shouted.

"[Item], 'Knights' Sword'!"
"NOOOOOO! PERVERT!!"
Mist let out another yell seeing the lower half of me who suddenly stood up.

"….. fine, 'Shorts'! Equip that one first!!"

I equipped the sword and shorts and faced the monster.
The slug started moving immediately afterwards.
The tentacles on its head flexed like a whip and thrusted towards Mist.
"YOU ERO-MONSTERRRR!!"
I swung the sword and lopped the tentacle off.
It was aiming for Mist.
That thing, could it probably be trying to get back inside Mist's body…?
"Mist, take those two and get away!"
I gave out orders to Mist who stood stock still from the confusion.
She nodded her head several times.
"Haibo, Twys! Let's get out of here!!"

She prompted the two girls to escape.

……. However.

“Why? What for?”
“You can’t leave the bath you know?”

They were just like when Mist started feeling ill.
In other words, their priorities had turned completely upside down.
Despite the fact that the slug had occupied half the bathtub, those two still wouldn’t leave it.
They weren’t minding being taking a bath together with a monster.
“What are you saying, you two!?”
—— In all likelihood, there are things like that slug inside those two, controlling them with hypnotic suggestions or something like that.
I feel like I want to hit myself for not noticing that and was having fun with their state.
But that’s one for later.

“Mist, never mind them! You run away on your own!”
Either way, the monster’s target is Mist.
I should let the normalized Mist run away.
“But, the girls!”
“I’ll protect those two! I promise!”
I had nothing to base that promise on, but I don’t have the time to persuade her.
While I was doing that the feelers wriggled and I beat them back with my batting skills.
Honestly, my arms are going numb from swinging the heavy sword. My untrained muscles are nearing their limits.
In addition, the E:ID phone’s MP is unreliable. Its natural regeneration doesn’t look like it has caught up with the battles it had.
I’m not confident I can protect her.
“Hurry!” I yelled to the indecisive Mist, and she finally resolved herself and started towards the exit.
“Mist!”
“What are you doing!?”

But then Haibo and Twys changed their attitude.
They leaped out of the bathtub as if that is an emergency and snapped at Mist who was planning to escape.
“NOOOO! LET GO!”
“You have to! Get in the bath with Yuuki!!”
“You’re not allowed to go out on your own! We haven’t pleasured Yuuki yet!!”
“You two are acting weird!!”
Mist became unable to move, being restrained by Haibo and Twys.

The tentacles wriggled to capture Mist.
I can’t deal with it with the sword anymore!

“[Skill]! ‘Strike Bubble‘!!”
I stretched the bubble as big as it can, covering the three girls.

[WARNING!!]

SCREEEE, there was a shrill warning tone.

[There was a sudden decrease in remaining mana quantity. The system’s running duration might be affected]

The smartphone is complaining that I’m using too much MP, the barrier was probably too big.
But the enemy’s attacks won’t stop.

I was stuck between a rock and a hard place.

“…. Yuuki, these two are acting weird”
I heard Mist’s sad voice from behind me.
“They won’t listen to what I’m saying… sob”
The biggest shock for her isn’t the monster but her friends’ behavior.
Finally she let out a sob and burst into tears.

“Yuuki, we caught Mist♪”
“The three of us belong to Yuuki, right!”
The three’s flirtations now seemed somehow hollow and eerie.

Why didn’t I realise this strangeness sooner!
The smartphone’s warning sound and Mist’s crying tormented me.

Just like that time.

That time when I was a kid, when Arina's bullying escalated and she almost died.
I should have realised that as well that time.
And yet I would always be too late and regret it!

[Remaining Mana 20%]
The E:ID phone's MP is running out….
Am I done for….
"Yuuki…"
As I was becoming pessimistic, Mist said to me.
"You can run away"
"……!"
I turned around and saw Mist thinly smiling.
"That thing's aiming for me, right? I'm happy you worked your hardest to protect me. So, you should run. If you run, these two will surely follow you, I think"
That was probably the best plan she could think of.

—— Stop kidding me!

"Do you remember what I said earlier?"
"Eh? …. sorry, about what?"
"I see. Okay, I'll say it one more time"

"There's somebody I can't betray"

There's no way I can run.
How can I look the person waiting for me there in the face?
I brandished the sword again.

Is it no good?
No. Don't give up, me!
Think, there has to be… something.

If I don't hurry the bubble's going to break.
I should use this somehow….

——…….

Bubble…?

Even if there was a magical component in the bubble's making, a bubble is still a bubble, right?

So…. that means….

I have confidence in this flash of insight, but there are risks with putting it into action.

"I'm sorry. I know that I'm the worst for asking a girl to do this. But, please" I said to Mist.
"Will you be bait for just one moment?"
Mist wiped her tears and smiled.
"Definitely help me, okay?"
She agreed.

" 'Break' !"
I held my sword and released the barrier.
A tentacle came.
I beat it off with the sword.
Next tentacle.
To this…

—— Mist, I'm sorry!

It ignored me and I ran through!

There's only one chance, I have to reach it before the tentacle reaches Mist!

"UOOOOOOOOOOOOOH!!"

I made a reckless charge and stabbed the enemy's gut with my sword.

"KEEEEEEEEE!!"
I made it!
The slug screamed and bent backwards.
"Eat this! My last Bubble!!"
I pushed a large quantity of bubbles into its belly.
The slug writhed in suffering, then, large amounts of fluid started coming out of it.

It worked.

Waiting for the end, I took out the sword and took some distance.
"….. what happened?"
Seeing that it's safe, Mist came to me.
"I changed the osmotic pressure inside its body with the bubble's surfactant. At least it's going to return to its original size"
"Osmo… pressure?"
Mist and the girls never took chemistry lessons, so they obviously won't understand.
"Ah, um… Have you ever used salt to kill slugs in the flower beds? It's something like that"
Having given her a simple explanation, I took out a two-liter canteen from the E:ID phone.

I emptied its contents and replaced it with the twitching slug bastard that had been reduced to the size of a palm.
"Y, you're not going to kill it?"
"No, not now"
I shuddered to think that something like this is nesting inside Haibo and Twys.
However, that's exactly why I have to let this one live.
I have to examine it and find a way to extract it from the other two…..

But before that.

"Mist…. also Haibo and Twys!"
"?"
"I really really seriously….!! Am sorry…!!"

I vigorously kowtowed on the bathroom until my head hit the floor.

"W, what's this all of a sudden. What's with the pose!?"

Ah, I see.
They don't know what a dogeza means.
Meh, that doesn't matter!

"For looking at you girls' bodies, for not noticing something's strange with you, for making you see something scary, for making you cry! I'm really really sorry!!"

“Hey, what is Yuuki doing?”
I heard Haibo’s doubtful voice.
“Yuuki’s apologizing”
Mist who had regained her sanity answered.
“Apologize?”
“Did Yuuki do something bad?”
“….. He didn’t. Yuuki did nothing wrong”
I heard footsteps approach me.
They were probably Mist’s

“Stop with the weird pose, please? Raise your head”
I raised my head and Mist who had covered her body with a linen cloth smiled bitterly at me.
“You’re too honest. Was my naked body that pitiful?”
“N, no, you were beautiful, in a word, a real treat to see…”
“Your real intentions are showing, you perverted boy”
“Muguu! That’s mean of you, asking me a leading question!”
“But it’s true isn’t it. You saw and you showed, you pervert. I’m just saying, this is the first time any man but my dad saw it!”
My charges increased….
“But, you desperately protected me, and I need Yuuki’s strength to save these two. So let’s not say things like that, okay?”
I see….
This is not the time to be bowing down.
I have to save these two and then Lady Demy.

I stood back up.
“Thank you,”I said.
Mist smiled and then….

“Well. I am going to have you take responsibility, as a man to a woman”

She swiftly announced my death sentence and went behind the partition.
“Yuuki, what’s wrong?”
“Your face is pale?”
Uhaha.
Now where should we go for the honeymoon….

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 21 – Magic Core Parasite

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/09/30/orejimi-21/

For the time being, I have to look for a way to take those slug monsters from these two.
“Call Arina here please. We need her help”
After wrapping myself in a towel, I instructed Mist.
“But how about those two?”
“I’ll take them to Lady Demy’s room. I hope they’ll listen to me. Haibo! Twys! Will you come with me to my room?”

“Ufufufu, a–ll ri–ght”
“What are we going to do in the room I wonder?”

The two seemed to think they were invited for something and responded in a flirty way.
Well, it’s fine so long as they’ll come along.
“… there’ll be something I think. —— owowow! Why are you pinching me!?”
“It irritates me somehow. Don’t do anything strange to them until I get back, okay!”
“I won’t I won’t!”

※ A few minutes later.

——CHNK!

“Yuu-ku—n! Arina came to help”
“Awawawawa!! Haibo, Twys! Please, get off me!”

I was lying face up and Haibo and Twys were on top of me, looming over in an unladylike way.
—— Arina and Mist barged in right in the middle of that.

T, the worst….

“T, these two forced me down! I told them to sit still!”
“Yuu-kun…”
Arina made a slight bow.

“Congratulations on your graduation”
“WHAT GRADUATION!!”
“You said you won’t do anything!”
Mist threw me a scornful yell.
“Sheesh, the worst!!”
“It’s force majeure! Don’t just look, do something about them!”
Mist grabbed the petite Haibo’s arm.
“You two too! Cut it out!”
“Don’t wanna! I want to get frisky with Yuuki!!”
That was too straight to the point….
Ero-hypnosis is scary….
Arina pointed her index finger at the two tantruming girls.

” ‘*Sleep Magic*‘ !”

“Hauu… uuh”
Plop. Plop.
Just as Arina chanted, the two lost their strength at the same time and fell asleep.
I finally became free….
I dug myself out of the two and sighed.
“Thanks, Arina. You’re a big help”
“Yes! Now you can attack back! Fight! Go for it Yuu-kun!”
“I’m not doing it you idiot!!”
“Eh? Then you’ll be satisfied with Arina instead?”
“Stop that you dumbass! What do you mean ‘instead’! You idiot idiot idiot!!”
“Uu…? I was wrong?”
“—— I somehow feel we’ve only added another problem girl…” said Mist with an uneasy look.
I have nothing to say against that….
“But you’re amazing, Arina-chan. You can use magic”
“E, ehehe…”
Arina hid behind me in embarrassment.
“Then, Yuu-kun. Should I put Mist to sleep, too?”
“… you, you’re definitely misunderstanding something, aren’t you”
“Eh. Then what kind of party are you having by gathering us maids here?”

“Enough, you. Shut up for a minute. I’ll explain now”

Blah blah yadda yadda.

While I put Haibo and Twys to bed, I told Arina the details of what happened in the bathroom.

“H, h, harem experience in the bathroom…!? T, that’s Yuu-kun for you…. Uummm. Congratulations on your graduation”
“I told you already, I didn’t graduate from anything! Just don’t talk about it anymore!”
She’s drooling for some reason. I don’t care anymore.
“… rather than that, can’t you take out the hypnosis slugs from these two?”
“Eeh? I, I don’t know…”
Well.
This is how Arina’s responses always go.
Always a pessimistic *I don’t know* even for things she could do.
I have to play my part and guide her.
“You could undo Lady Demy’s magic couldn’t you?”
“B, but… I did that just because I saw something strange caught in her…”
“You’re the only one I can rely on”

“Uuh…”
Arina became troubled, then…
“F, for now, can you show me a live slug?”

I took out the water canteen and a metal basin out of the E:ID phone and poured the slug out.
Though it was dying, it doesn’t seem to be dead yet. It twitched and wriggled.
“Uuuh, what is this…. It’s disgusting like Arina…”
“How low do you value yourself, you? What do you think? Can you figure something out?”
“I think I can, I guess…. This, came out of Mist-san didn’t it?”
“That’s right”
“This, monster, I’m pretty sure it sticks to the ‘magic cores’ the people from this world has, then manipulates those people. A magic core parasite, I guess”

“Magic core parasite…”

Mist started shivering.

"I can feel Mist-san's magic power. I'm sure it started off small and got bigger suckling off of Mist-san's magic core"
Good good. Seems like Arina's smart switch that sometimes appears has been flipped.
Keep going please.
"You think you can take it out of the other two?"
"N, no. From what I heard from you, Mist-can vomited it out because of her own immunity, I guess it's different between people. I can't do anything else until I examine some more, I guess," said Arina
She held the metal basin in both hands then…

" '*Appraisal Magic*' "[1]
[1] «TN: Appraisal-sama, is that you? Nai wa–»

She chanted.
Arina's palms were enveloped in a faint light.
I totally have no idea what she's doing, but it looks like she's examining the parasite somehow.

"There are monsters like these in our bodies…. When did it get in…?" Mist said, pinning down her fear.
Seeing the thing with her eyes once again must have brought back some feelings.

I've done it now. I should've been more considerate and prevented her from seeing it.
While I was reflecting on it, Arina said
"It was probably *really* tiny at the start, so it was probably mixed in with your food without you knowing about it, or possibly you were forced to swallow it and your memory was erased with a suggestion so you didn't remember"
"Oi dumbass! Not in front of her!"
"Eh? …. ah!! Ssssss, sorry!"
She really did it for me….

"…. it's all right. She's right…"
Mist settled down on the bed where the other two were sleeping.
"I'm fine," she firmly said, but she can't possibly be fine.

“Don’t worry. It’s out of you now”
I sat next to her to comfort her.
I can’t do much but at least I wanted to get rid of her uneasiness.
Then Mist gripped my hand tightly.
“…… but, it’s scary”
She tearfully let out her emotions.

“Did I get in the bath with some other men…? Did I show myself naked to someone somewhere…? Did I take a guest, or something more… uuuu”
Her feelings flowed to me through skin.
It’s probably not something a girl could endure.
We don’t know who planted these things in them but they did something horrible….

I’ll definitely find out who did this and give them a whacking…!

“Was I…. dirtied long ago without myself knowing it…”
“You’re probably all right”
Arina said while doing her appraisal.
“This monster seems to be still under development, it has something like a log for review. Looks like this is the first time it’s been used on Mist-san”
“…. is, that so. Thank goodness”
Hearing that, Mist gripped my hand even stronger.

“Thank goodness”
She said as if carving it into her mind.

“I’m…. still…. clean enough to be loved by someone….. Uuuuu…. Yuuki….!!”
Mist leaned on and clung to me.
Her body weight was pressed on my chest.
“I’m glad it was Yuuki….! Thoughtful Yuuki…! Otherwise, we’d be, right now…!! Hic…. Uwaaaaaa—!”
“It’s alright, it’s alright…”
I pat her head, calming down her high-strung emotions.

I gave Arina a look.
She suddenly looked away and turned her sight back to the metal basin.
……. It looks like it bugs her mind that I’m sympathizing with another girl’s

feelings….

“Ah….”

Then Arina realized something.

“Um. H, how is Ojousama? She’s still not back from dinner, right!?”

“……!!”

Crap. I forgot.

Mist let go of my body.

“Go! Hurry!!”

She yelled.

I grabbed the E:ID phone and dashed away.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 22 – Improved Product

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/01/orejimi-22/

The room, right after Yuuki dashed away to go and see Lady Demy.
The ones who were left there were four girls wearing apron dresses.
Haibo and Twys who had been put soundly to sleep with magic.
Mist who was trying to regain herself after the shock, and Arina who was examining the true identity of the apparition.

"I wonder if Lady Demy is alright?" said Mist anxiously.
"She'll be alright, Yuu-kun will definitely bring her along"
Arina answered her, full of faith in him.

"I see…. she'll be alright. Yuuki's going to where she is"
Mist repeated the answer, persuading herself.

"….. Yuuki is amazing, isn't he. He's running around with all he's got for everyone's sake"
"That's because he's Yuu-kun. It's only natural"
"I see. Natural"

Mist wiped her tears and fell into thought for a little while, then…
She asked as if she was fumbling for something.

"What are you to Yuuki?"
"Arina? Hmmm"
Arina turned towards Mist.
"I'm Yuu-kun's….."
She showed a lascivious smile.

" 'Somebody that Mist-chan can never ever become'. —you know?"

That was her answer.
"—…."
twitch
Irritation and envy ran through Mist's face.

As both are girls, they noticed each others feelings, and something tense that

the eye can’t see overwhelmed the room.

The deadlock lasted several seconds, the tense time felt long.

“— Ju–st kidding”
Arina said jokingly, now smiling a bright smile.
“Fufu, it’s alright. I’m only Yuu-kun’s childhood friend”
“Ah. So that’s what you mean ‘I can never become’…”
Well, true. No matter how much effort she spent now she can never be his childhood friend.
After getting tricked, now Mist’s face became awkward.
Smiling from her successful prank, Arina stood up and poured water into a cup.
“Here”
She offered it to Mist.
“You’ve come to like Yuu-kun, haven’t you?”
“…. I don’t know. But, I kind of feel sad when I see him with another girl”
“That’s because Yuu-kun is so cool, isn’t it. He’s popular too, even if he doesn’t know it himself”
“Ah, I think I get it”
“He’s a sinful boy, isn’t he”
The two happily sat side by side, they let their guard down and smiled.
Mist drank the cup dry.
“Hey, since you’re his childhood friend…”
She once again fumbled
“You must know what type of girl Yuuki likes… right?”
After Mist said so, she noticed how straightforward what she said was.
“Ah, umm. This is… I’m just curious, okay”
Her cheeks turned red.

“Fufu”
Arina laughed.
“W, what… Don’t laugh! I’m really only curious!”
Mist felt like she’s being made fun of and tried to smooth it over in a panic.
“Ufufu”
“Stop that!”
“Fufufu”

“I said…..”
“Fufufu, fufu. Ufufufufufufu”
“——…….? Arina… chan?”

“Ufufu, I wonder what you just drank right now? Stu–pid stu–pid♪ Ufufufufufufufu”

“……———, eh?”

“I told you didn’t I? It’s small at first so you won’t see it if it’s mixed in with food. Even if you drink it you won’t remember it. What do you think you just easily drank? Hey, are you dumb?”
“…….”
“Don’t worry. I’ve improved it, it’s a high powered one you can’t compare with this flabby thing. It’s not going to come out on its own anymore”
“…….. Ah, Ahahahaa….”
Mist laughed.
So she’s still going to tease me, this girl. Mist dryly laughed with that feeling.

“Ufufu”
“Ahaha”
“Ufufufu”
“Ah, ahahaha”
“Fufufu. This is fun♪”
“…. Hey”
“Yes, what is it?”

“You’re joking— right?”

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 23 – Time to Expose The Plan

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/01/orejimi-23/

I ran down the hallway and went down the stairs.
I was sure that this is the one that leads to the dining room.
Worrying about that, I pushed my way into a large room.

Fortunately, I was able to spot Lady Demy immediately.
A maid was waiting on her and she was just about to go back to the room.

“Lady Demy!”
I rushed over to her and she looked surprised for a moment, but she soon turned to the maid.
“I’m stumped. This boy becomes like this when I’m not around”
She clouded the issue with fond words.
“Y, you really get along with each other”
“I’ll leave that to your imagination. He’s already here now so you may go”
“Yes. Please excuse me”
The maid gave a bow and went back where she came.

“….. Yuuki-san. Did something happen?”
She said, returning to her Princess Rosé face.
She seems to notice something’s amiss from the way I looked.
Good, she’s normal for now.
Doesn’t look like they did anything to her….
“Let’s get back to the room and I’ll talk”

——…….

Once we’re back in the room, Arina was still appraising the monster, and Mist was sitting on the bed near the other two, looking worried.
“Ah, Yuu-kun, welcome back!”
“I’m glad. Ojousama is fine too, right”
Arina and Mist stood up to greet us.
“This….. what happened here?”
Borrowed as it is, Lady Demy was wide-eyed in surprise seeing her room full of

people.

"Sorry for the ruckus. I'll explain"

Blah blah yadda yadda.
I told her what happened until now.
Lady Demy scowled on the part about the bath, but she shuddered hearing what happened afterwards and made a dark expression.
"….. they were developing such a terrifying monster as that in this residence…"
"Yes. While we haven't examined the matter about the spies, it turned into something big. …. Arina. Did you find out something about this?"
"Umm, yes. …. I don't really know much, but there's one thing I can say for sure"
Arina took a flower with a strong stem from a vase, poked the slug and said.
"This thing, only works on girls"
"Huuuh!? It's really an ero-monster!?"
"Yes, but not like that, strictly speaking. Magic cores have something like wavelengths that depend on the owner's gender and age. This thing was adjusted to match the wavelength of girls around the age of Arina or Lady Demy"
"I see….. ……. ……"

"So it's really an ero-monster isn't it!!"
"Yes, it's an ero-tentacle-monster!!"

"What the hell, stop that"
Without an outlet, I launched a retort, but…
"…….. No, wait"
I stopped myself.
There's something stuck in my mind.

"Lady Demy. You said this residence doesn't have gardeners, didn't you. Mist, is that true?"
"Eh? Yeah, this residence doesn't employ gardeners. We do almost everything, we only call in outside help sometimes"
"Gardeners are usually male, aren't they?"
Mist thought about it, and nodded in affirmation.

"Now that you mention it"

Arina muttered.
“There are no men in the kitchens. Also, there are no old maids. Right, Mist-san?”
“Eh, yeah…. that’s right”
Which means this residence….
“To begin with, why did Tris first send the guard knights away….?”
“So that was really…”
Now it was Lady Demy talking.
“Because they can seal mine and Arina’s mouths with the magic core parasite, isn’t it? They won’t have a problem even if the monsters and the rebellion plan is found out. As for Yuuki-san…. um…”

They can kill me, right?
It was obviously clear which one is easier to manage between knights attached to an organization and someone with no clear origins like me.

I see, it all makes sense.
But.
…. Is that really true….

“No, that’s wrong. Didn’t Lady Demy say this in the coach?”

[If they knew I’ll be coming, anyone would hide the evidence]

“It’s weirder that they don’t hide evidence when there’s a visitor coming, right? They’ll get suspected if they deliberately turn her away”

Mind control monsters that only work on girls.
The parasites’ targets in the residence and the fact that there’s nobody other than trusted people.
And Lady Demy coming into the middle of all this.

—which means, this is.

“Yuu-kun…”
Arina said with a worried face.
“T, this might be because Arina is…. an idiot, but…. It feels like Yuu-kun is going to say something scary”
“I… think so too”
Please let this be the idiot’s delusion.

If this is true, then we have ‘lost’ from the beginning.

But looking at the situation up to now, I can’t think of anything other than this….

My anxiety caught Princess and Mist’s attention.
“Princess Rosé”
“Yes. Wait…. *YUUKI-SAN*!”
Princess panicked because I said it clearly in front of Mist, but that doesn’t matter now.
“Please listen closely. The person these parasites are made for, is probably Princess Rosé—you yourself”
“Eh….”

Princess Rosé was caught off guard.

“This parasite was made in order to manipulate princess Rosé, and you nonchalantly came here to get this parasite implanted in you”
“Please wait just a moment!”
Princess Rosé raised her voice in objection.
“I, um, Rosé made her coming here unknown to anybody! The one who came here was Demy!”
“Then, why is it that Princess had to come here?”
“That is….. because Marquis Isky is being suspected for rebellion”
“That’s probably a rumor this residence’s people spread. Didn’t the knights explain this before? The King can’t afford not to dispatch you to this residence. That’s why they spread the rumors”
“No way…!”
“The people here are too good. ‘Nobody can talk about whatever happens here from now on’. They only employed young girls so that even if there are witnesses to these incidents and experiments, they can be dealt with by silencing them using the parasites they made with the experiments. … probably …. all the maids in the residence have been implanted with these so that they’d be free to move at any time”
“…..——”
Lady Demy covered her mouth in shock.

“No, to even go that far…”

Princess Rosé said, trembling, my theory probably having struck her feelings.
“Just who did and why would they want to manipulate my mind…?”
“I don’t have a conclusive thoughts as to why but I know who would. There is one like that, right? Someone who’s in a hurry to make your heart his own…”

SLAM!!

Then suddenly, the door was opened wide.

“STOP RIGHT THERE, YOU BRUTE!!”

Tris’ loud voice resounded.
—damn it.
I was about to answer her but looks like I was one move too late.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

“STOP RIGHT THERE YOU BRUTE!!”
Tris came in with a yell and looked over the room at me.
“Servant Yuuki! What are you doing with our maids and the Archduke’s daughter Lady Demy!”
“*That’s my line*! How could you plant this on Mist and the girls!”
I checked the E:ID phone’s MP.
30%… several shots of bubble.
I guess I can afford to rage about a little…?
Just when I was preparing myself for battle,
“Oi oi, what’s with all this racket. What’s going on here?”
Princess Rosé’s fiancé, Glenn appeared.

To appear with the timing that he did, I have no doubt he’s the ringleader behind this incident. Somehow he made the bug to plant on Rosé who he hasn’t been getting along with.

“Glenn-sama. This man took Lady Demy hostage and is planning something”
Are they, planning to make me take the blame with this timing.

“Oi oi, Tris. You’re being rude to our guest…. hm? What’s this?”
Glenn took notice of the metal basin.
“Tris, what do you think this looks like?”
“I don’t know, all I can see is that it’s something sinister…”
“So do I”
They shamelessly said such things.
“…… Oi, you maids sleeping over there! *Are you feeling alright*!?”

“”Mmmh….!?””

At Glenn’s word, Haibo and Twys who should have been asleep sprang awake.
“Uuh, geh…”
“Gohu”
They then held their throats in pain and started choking.
“Haibo, Twys!!”
Mist screamed.
“Oi, what did you do to those two!”
I questioned Glenn, but all he said was, “I have no idea what you’re talking about!?” and played innocent.

The girls groaned and made a sound like a clogged drainage gutter.

“Gebu…., ueeeh….!!”
“Ueeeeehh!!”

They spewed something on the bed.
The magic core parasite.
……. it seems that line was the condition for spitting them out.

“Now this is surprising! What could this be!”
“You, what did you do to our maids!!”
Glenn and Tris blamed me as the prime offender.

“Enough of this bullshit!!”
I’m not taking crap from these two anymore!
“[Skill]! Strike…”
“Glenn-samaa!!”
As I was setting up the E:ID, somebody stood in front of me.

—It was Princess Rosé

She rushed to Glenn's side and clung to him.
"Glenn-sama, please help me! This man was trying to make me swallow something strange!!"
She begged for his help.

"Eh"
"Wait…"
"No way"

The three of us were taken by surprise.

"Ah, beautiful Lady Demy. You must've been afraid"
"No, Glenn-sama. I'm not Demy, I'm Rosé. I'm the one who's going to be your queen, Rosé"
As she was saying that, she gave a loving kiss to the cheek of Glenn who she despised.

I was too late.
Princess Rosé's body had already been planted with the parasite long ago.

"Just how far were you going to go! Engage! Engage!"
At Tris' call, several maids came rustling in.
Every one of them were holding a sword in their hands.
But…, aren't they a little too lightly equipped for guards?
"Don't take them lightly because they're maids. They have been quite well trained"
While brushing Princess' cheek, Glenn gave me a warning.
"That's not true"
Mist said.
"Nobody ever went through any training"
— Just what is he planning this time.
"…… Well. They were trained, but there are limits, though"

One of the maids moved.
She's coming!
I prepared myself, but she turned herself around, still holding her weapon.

slash, *slash*…. her fellow maid's cheek and clothes were slashed.

"Can't be helped that something like this happened"

Somehow each of the maids thrust their swords at another maid's skin.
So they were all going to be hostages.
Planted with the parasite, they will easily stab their friends to the death at Glenn's order.

Arina's magic.
My skills.
No matter what we use we can't protect all of them.
Worst of all, Princess Rosé had already fallen to enemy hands.

…… Damn this.
There's no choice but to accept my loss here….

Therefore.

"Arina!!"
I yelled.

"Run away!!"

"————!!"
Arina did not hesitate.
Accelerated by magic, she broke through the glass and jumped outside.
That girl believes in me.
If I say run, she'll run even if she had to abandon me.
I'm fully aware that I'm making use of her dependence towards me.

"Nuuu, I'm not letting you escape!"
Tris showed his anger.
"……Don't mind. She can't do anything anyway"
Glenn said as he kissed Rosé's on the back of her hand.

«TN: Original title is 'Captured Princess Rosé'. I thought that might be a spoiler so I left it out»

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 24

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/02/orejimi-24/

"STOP RIGHT THERE YOU BRUTE!!"
Tris came in with a yell and looked over the room at me.
"Servant Yuuki! What are you doing with our maids and the Archduke's daughter Lady Demy!"
"*That's my line*! How could you plant this on Mist and the girls!"
I checked the E:ID phone's MP.
30%… several shots of bubble.
I guess I can afford to rage about a little…?
Just when I was preparing myself for battle,
"Oi oi, what's with all this racket. What's going on here?"
Princess Rosé's fiancé, Glenn appeared.

To appear with the timing that he did, I have no doubt he's the ringleader behind this incident. Somehow he made the bug to plant on Rosé who he hasn't been getting along with.

"Glenn-sama. This man took Lady Demy hostage and is planning something"
Are they, planning to make me take the blame with this timing.
"Oi oi, Tris. You're being rude to our guest…. hm? What's this?"
Glenn took notice of the metal basin.
"Tris, what do you think this looks like?"
"I don't know, all I can see is that it's something sinister…"
"So do I"
They shamelessly said such things.
"…… Oi, you maids sleeping over there! *Are you feeling alright*!?"

""Mmmh….!?""

At Glenn's word, Haibo and Twys who should have been asleep sprang awake.
"Uuh, geh…"
"Gohu"
They then held their throats in pain and started choking.

“Haibo, Twys!!”
Mist screamed.
“Oi, what did you do to those two!”
I questioned Glenn, but all he said was, “I have no idea what you’re talking about!?” and played innocent.

The girls groaned and made a sound like a clogged drainage gutter.

“Gebu…., ueeeh….!!”
“Ueeeeehh!!”

They spewed something on the bed.
The magic core parasite.
……. it seems that line was the condition for spitting them out.

“Now this is surprising! What could this be!”
“You, what did you do to our maids!!”
Glenn and Tris blamed me as the prime offender.

“Enough of this bullshit!!”
I’m not taking crap from these two anymore!
“[Skill]! Strike…”
“Glenn-samaa!!”
As I was setting up the E:ID, somebody stood in front of me.

—It was Princess Rosé

She rushed to Glenn’s side and clung to him.
“Glenn-sama, please help me! This man was trying to make me swallow something strange!!”
She begged for his help.

“Eh”
“Wait…”
“No way”

The three of us were taken by surprise.

“Ah, beautiful Lady Demy. You must’ve been afraid”
“No, Glenn-sama. I’m not Demy, I’m Rosé. I’m the one who’s going to be your queen, Rosé”

As she was saying that, she gave a loving kiss to the cheek of Glenn who she despised.

I was too late.
Princess Rosé's body had already been planted with the parasite long ago.

"Just how far were you going to go! Engage! Engage!"
At Tris' call, several maids came rustling in.
Every one of them were holding a sword in their hands.
But…, aren't they a little too lightly equipped for guards?
"Don't take them lightly because they're maids. They have been quite well trained"
While brushing Princess' cheek, Glenn gave me a warning.
"That's not true"
Mist said.
"Nobody ever went through any training"
— Just what is he planning this time.
"…… Well. They were trained, but there are limits, though"

One of the maids moved.
She's coming!
I prepared myself, but she turned herself around, still holding her weapon.

slash, *slash*…. her fellow maid's cheek and clothes were slashed.

"Can't be helped that something like this happened"

Somehow each of the maids thrust their swords at another maid's skin.
So they were all going to be hostages.
Planted with the parasite, they will easily stab their friends to the death at Glenn's order.

Arina's magic.
My skills.
No matter what we use we can't protect all of them.
Worst of all, Princess Rosé had already fallen to enemy hands.

…… Damn this.
There's no choice but to accept my loss here….

Therefore.

“Arina!!”
I yelled.

“Run away!!”

“ーーーー!!”
Arina did not hesitate.
Accelerated by magic, she broke through the glass and jumped outside.
That girl believes in me.
If I say run, she’ll run even if she had to abandon me.
I’m fully aware that I’m making use of her dependence towards me.

“Nuuu, I’m not letting you escape!”
Tris showed his anger.
“……Don’t mind. She can’t do anything anyway”
Glenn said as he kissed Rosé’s on the back of her hand.

«TN: Original title is ‘Captured Princess Rosé’. I thought that might be a spoiler so I left it out»

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 25 – Tie In: Ride on Me!? Hero King Glenn and Demon Queen Rosé

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/02/orejimi-25/

About a thousand years from when Yuuki's gang fell into a predicament.
Just like Yuuki predicted for Rosé, this world experienced several wars and monster exterminations, and a new culture was born amidst the destruction.
Magic was refined into Magecraft[1] and developed into a craft that anyone who received training for a license could use, despite talent and individual differences.
At the same time, this means that there's a struggle between those who used it for crime and those who wants to stop them, the police organisations in this world racked their brains everyday handling the illegal mages' crimes.
[1] «TN: mahou (魔法) vs majutsu (魔術)»

There yet exists the ruins of the Isky residence whose time has ended, and was being carefully preserved as a nationally-designated cultural asset.

On a black, diffusely shining stone monument, these words were written.
[House of the Hero Glenn Irish Isky]
Underneath it, long descriptions of his exploits were carved.
It was also known that the change of the country's name from Ivan to Isky happened in his time.

Two young women entered the gardens where Rosé and Yuuki once walked.
Flowers bloomed there, not like how they were in the old days, but more beautifully, the trees planted for defense had been removed and in their place a lawn was laid down and with the addition of playground equipment, it became a park for the citizens to rest.
One of the women walking on the park, a woman of just over twenty, was wearing a Faith of the Born Light habit[2], her silent movements giving a sense of the depth of her moral sense, born out of her religious piety.
What's curious is that there were rabbit ears growing out of her head, but none of the passers-by seemed to pay them any attention.

The other woman was very young, a cute little girl that seems to have just reached ten years of age.
Her rough military-uniform-like clothes did not match her looks, but her semi-long hair tied up with a rubber band and pastel colored accessories attached here and there gave a sense of innocence appropriate for her age.
However, her attitude, oozing confidence out of her entire body betrayed that, giving her an adult atmosphere rather than a childish one. It's almost as if she was a career woman in the shape of a little girl.
[2] «TN: nun uniform»

"Did you know how our Nikka Choir began?"
As they walked, the nun asked the little girl.
"Yes, Sister Lilipa. It was named after Sister Nikka who took down the Demon Queen with Hero King Glenn"
At the little girl's answer, Lilipa slowly nodded.
"The war a thousand years ago was grand. After becoming King, Glenn-sama devoted himself to fighting his deranged wife, Demon Queen Rosé, and made the harsh decision to take her down himself"

It was a historic incident known by every person with general education in this country, nay, this whole world.
As history records it, Glenn married Rosé and spent several years living their days in happiness.
However, after her father, King Ivan was taken ill, her mind started to go mad and she finally got her hands on forbidden magic and became a frightening monster.
The magic of Rosé who was called a Demon Queen was incredible, she dominated the whole world in the blink of an eye and started an age of darkness.
The ones who opposed her were Sister Nikka, who received a revelation from heaven, and Rosé's former husband Glenn.
The war, known as the *Great Demon Queen War*, lasted several years, then Glenn, in tears, shot down Rosé and laid her to rest in this land.

"Our Nikka Choir's mission is to spread the teachings of the will of heaven so that a tragedy like that never happens again"
"That's wonderful work"

Seemingly pleased at the young girl's backchanneling, Lilipa smiled.
Then
"— Renbo-san. Will you join us to carry out this mission together?"
She offered her hand to the young girl.
"A superior magecrafter like you is exactly the strength that we need. What do you say? Will you protect the world's peace together with us?"

The young girl, Renbo, returned her smile and said.

"Unfortunately, I'll have to refuse"

"Oi! Renbo!"
Renbo, who was relaxing alone at the park's bench, was approached by a young boy.
He was just slightly older than her.
He was a blonde handsome boy, you wouldn't be blamed if you mistook his gender because of his gender-neutral features.
Rabbit ears swayed from his head.
"You were meeting with nee-san, weren't you! Could you possibly…!"
"I made su–re I refused her"
Renbo replied, mixed with a sigh.
"Ah, good", the boy said, catching his breath.
Seeing him, the young girl also sighed.
"I'm an idiot too, aren't I, taking Aparu's conspiracy theory seriously, to even turn down an elite job"
"If it's you you can go anywhere you like, right? Just forget about the choir. What they're doing isn't about singing songs. They're practicing magic weapons to suppress their own thoughts. To begin with…"
"Hey, Aparu"
"… what? HAH! No, stop—we're in public!"
Sensing something, Aparu turned pale and shouted.

" '*Footstool*' "

"NNNUOOOOOOOOOOOOOHH!"
With a single word from Renbo, he dropped his hands and feet on the ground in tears in the miserable pose known as *all fours*.
"Yoissho," Renbo rested her feet on his back, and went back to relaxing.

By some strong compulsion, she turned her friend into human furniture.
… In public, at that.
“If only you’d cure yourself out of this fetish, you’d make a good friend”
“Really? Well, I don’t feel like curing it”
Disregarding the commotion around her, Renbo talked at Aparu’s back.
“So, once you finish training school, where are you going to go?”
“You’re asking for someone’s future plan while exposing his disgrace!?”
“It’s more exciting to blur the boundary between normal and abnormal. You understand that much, right?”
“And you’re even asking for my agreement on top of all that…”
haah, Aparu sighed, and said,

“I’m going to be a ‘*dimension police*‘”
“Eh. You’re going to the lower world!?”

The ‘Lower World’ is what the other world is recognised as in this age.
Yes, our world that was called the ‘World Given Light’ in Rosé’s time had after the months and years passed become observable from this world and is now common knowledge.
It lies on the other side of the scenery you see with your eyes, if you have fulfilled certain conditions, it flips like turning the page of a book, the world was *that* close by.
However, Renbo’s society had cut off and prohibited contact with the Lower World.

The reason was because it was clear that once exchange was established, political disputes regarding race, religion, and economics would return.

But in this world there are criminals who defy this rule and illegally travel to that world.
In order to control them, there were the ‘*Dimension Police*‘ that Aparu was aiming for.
Their job is to integrate into our world and when those people came, to conceal their existence and forcibly deport them back.

“You don’t know what kind of place it is but you seem so eager to go”
“I can study for that. Most of all, I want to see them. The people without magic cores, the ‘world given light’…”

“Hmm….”

Renbo pondered a bit, looking cute as she does.
“— Alright, I’ve decided to go as well,” she declared to the human furniture.
“Listen, you, we don’t go there to play, you know”
“I know, I’m just saying what’s on my mind. It’s just as well, I’m getting bored with this world”
nnnh, Renbo stretched, then she stood up.

” ‘*Wait five minutes and you may stand*‘ ”
“Well, *thanks*”
After giving her friend a new order, Renbo walked away.

“Lower World, huh. Somehow I feel I’m going to have a wonderful encounter there”

With that sort of presentiment bouncing in her chest, Renbo walked a new path, leaving Aparu still on all fours.

A side story in the form of a tie-in
The escapades of Renbo and Aparu after becoming dimensional police will be submitted separately as *Ride on Me!?*[3] Please check it out.
[3] «TN: http://ncode.syosetu.com/n0236cf/»

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 26 – Glenn's Violence and The Princess Who Left

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/03/orejimi-26/

Underneath the ground of Isky's vast residence, other than the escape passages there have also been established several jail to lock up prisoners in. There was only one entrance into such windowless places, and of course, it was solidly built so you won't escape once you're in there.
On the stone stairs leading to one of those, Yuuki and Mist walked, led by the maids who had became puppets.

CHNK, a cold sound rang as the prison doors shut.

Before the bars there stood Tris, Glenn, and Princess Rosé who was snuggling up to him.
"What do you think Tris? It went well, didn't it?"
Glenn said proudly.
"Yes. As expected from Lord Glenn. I was a little surprised when you told me to send the maids to bath, though…"
"There's no way he wouldn't bring the maids to his room after being invited to bath."
The two said as they made a vulgar laugh.
"……. Why didn't you kill me right away," asked Yuuki, his eyes full of hatred.
Glenn said as he played with Rosé's hair,
"You're going to be the one researching the bug. When the princess turns strange it's got to be someone's fault, right? An unknown like you is just perfect for the job"

An inspector from the castle would come visit and examine Lady Demy's room, he will collect objective evidence that there was a ritual that was about to be performed there.
Afterwards, even if something strange were to happen to the princess' body the blame will be put on Yuuki.
Even after he'd been hung from the gallows, it's still possible to claim "when we

examined thoroughly she was already~”. Glenn triumphantly explained his scenarios.

“Don’t screw with me!”
Mist shook the prison bars and yelled.
“Yuuki, We… we’re not your toys!”
“Yeah, you’re right. I have no need for you anymore. — I’ve got myself the best toy, you see”
Glenn wrapped his arm around Rosé’s back and grabbed the chest that was symbolic of her.
“Hnn”
Princess let out an agitated sigh.
Glenn showed this to Yuuki and persistently caressed his lover.
“Get your hands off of Rosé you fucking trash!”
Yuuki yelled, unable to hold back anymore.
Glenn’s eyes immediately turned into an evil look.
“Oi Rosé. Your servant is really lacking manners”
“I beg your forgiveness, Glenn-sama. I shall punish—”

THWACK!
Princess was slapped in the cheek.

“This is because you neglected his training!”
He gave her another hit, another blow.
Princess Rosé’s cheek received his palm again and again and again.
“P, please forgi…. hau! Please forgive… auu!”
While asking for forgiveness, even if she tried to defend herself she couldn’t resist a man’s strength, and her white cheek became red from the rough treatment.
Taking their upcoming marriage into account, this might be called domestic violence, though it’s too early for that.
“Oi, Stop! STOP!”
Totally ignoring Yuuki’s screams for it to stop, the sound of skin hitting skin echoed in the dungeon where sounds bounce easily.
“Goddammit! You better be ready…”
Yuuki was about to start up his E:ID phone, but Mist stopped his hand at the last

minute.
“Not now…, tch, Princess is going to get punished more!”
Just like she said, even if he could stop this injustice, not only that they won’t be able to save the princess, they don’t know what’ll happen to the dominated princess herself after they left this dungeon.
But even Mist who said it herself was teary-eyed, her lips trembling in anger.
Even Yuuki could do nothing more than turn his eyes away.

“Haa… Haa…. Fuu…”
Glenn, who had been punishing the princess until his breathing became rough, wiped away his sweat, flowing like he had just been doing sports.
On the other hand, the beautiful princess’ cheek was swelling, her face was a mess, with blood coming out of her nose, and she collapsed on the spot.
“Please… please forgive me”
But Rosé still blankly begged Glenn for forgiveness.
“Umm… Glenn-sama”
Trembling, Tris called out his master.
“She’s still the princess, isn’t this a little too…”
“Hm? I can’t?”
Glenn gave him a glance and winked, Tris then froze.
“N, no, it’s nothing too excessive!”
He backpedalled.
“However, see, you finally have your hands on Princess Rosé, so isn’t it too much of a waste if there’s scars on her”
“Aah, well, you’re right. Oi, bring that here”
One of the maids brought a bottle.
Glenn, without uncorking the stopper on the bottle, smashed the neck and roughly poured the liquid inside on Rosé’s face.
“To treat such an expensive healing potions like that!”
“It’s alright, it’s something Nikka made”
Having the fluid poured on them, Rosé’s wounds quickly closed, and she was restored to the beautiful princess she was.
“Thank you very much! Glenn-sama!”
“Pff…. Hah hah ha! You’re even saying *thanks*!”
Glenn laughed a loud, vulgar laugh.

“Because I have received your mercy….”
Oi, look at this, this is *that* Princess Rosé, you know! Her impregnable highness the princes whom everyone adored, who even refused my invitation to dance! That princess *thanked me* after being knocked about! This is funny!!”
“It is an undeserved honor for me to be able to make Glenn-sama happy. Thank you very much for brainwashing me!!”
Yuuki listened to Rosé’s delighted voice, gritting his teeth.
“……. Princess Rosé….. He’s the one who hit you…. Please open your eyes…!”
“No, you’re wrong Yuuki”
Princess said to Yuuki in a voice that would make blood freeze.
“This is your fault, *servant*”
She then walked up to Yuuki who could only watch, and spat on his face.
“Princess….”
“Die. For Glenn-sama’s sake. And for my sake as well.”
“God…. dammit…”
Yuuki crumbled down on the spot.
“Ain’t this a good show? I’m offering this to you, who’s going to the gallows. Hahahaha”
Yuuki, who was too stricken with grief to retort, didn’t even see the backs of the three leaving the dungeon.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 27 – Recovery

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/03/orejimi-27/

Mist's fingers were trembling.
Not because she's cold.
It was unstoppable fear at Glenn's horrible treatment to Princess he made a display of earlier.

What the hell was that.
Was that something a human being does!?

Moreover, he was manipulating a woman like a slave, no, something lower than that, and told her off with one-sided reasoning. Furthermore, the light behind those eyes were glaring with sadism.
Even Mist who doesn't know of his elation nor arousal saw it, the threat from the emotions that went beyond her understanding shook her.
A monster.
He's wearing the skin of a person, but *that man is a monster*!
Mist couldn't even stand without something to help her.
plop, she fell on her backside and gulped.
Scary.
ScaryScary.
ScaryScaryScary….

She shook her head in denial, but that sense of intimidation won't go away.
She couldn't put strength in her body.
To face that monster, there's nothing we could do….

"*We*?"

She spread her vision that was narrowed with fear.
In front of her eyes there was a gloomy young boy, unmoving.
It was Yuuki.
She didn't know what relations he had with the princess.
However, to pretend to be her lover, even if it were an act, means they must be close.

That princess was happily being hit by that bastard, spat on himself, and left him here.
It'll be hard to tell him to stand back up.

But that's if there's no one to support him.

This is not the time to be shivering.
This time it's my turn to do for him what he did for me earlier. Mist took a deep breath.
She put her fear to one corner of her mind and swallowed her breath.
Yosh…..
"Yuuki"
He did not move even after being called.
"Yuuki, it's all right"
She made her voice as gentle as she could and caressed his back.
"……. just what is 'all right'…."
Yuuki blankly spoke.
"Princess, like this, by that bastard…. I couldn't protect princess"
"It's true that it was horrible, but we can fix her with medicine. Also, there's Arina-chan"
"Haha. Arina?"
Yuuki spoke with a hint of scorn.
"What could that girl do. I'm sure she's cowering and crying somewhere"
"Yuuki…"
Looking at him in an unusual state, Mist felt her heart about to break.
However, she couldn't lose here.
As Mist wiped her tears and groped for something new to say.
"Yeah, that's right, isn't it. I didn't make it in time for Arina, either. I'm always like this…"

He seems to have some trauma about 'not making it in time' in him.

"In the end, I couldn't do anything. Bad timing, no talent, nothing. Ah…. I can just die here in this world…"
If Glenn did that assault show aiming for this emptiness, it was a huge success.
Yuuki, in his despair, would surely die hanging as he was told.
It's frustrating, but that demon knows how to hold a person's heart.

But I'm not going to let him!!

"Yuuki…, Yuu-kun!"
If he were alone, he'd certainly lose.
But he has Mist now.
"Don't say you don't have anything! Yuu-kun's the one who saved us, right!?"
"In the end, that was just me being a coward"
"Yuu-kun! When people fight, there's no one who's not afraid of anything! To see people stronger than them, and how small they are, getting afraid! But they fight! If you keep saying 'I won't make it in time' you'll never make it in time!"
"……"
"Stand up! Fight! Save Princess Rosé! Protect Arina-chan! Because…"

This is definitely not herself.
It's not her who'd say something like this to bring him back.
But… If she could make him stand, it doesn't matter who it is!
"Because, Yuu-kun! You have somebody you can't betray, right!?"

"…… tch!!"

bump, she felt something throb.
Yuuki slowly got up.
He wiped the liquid clinging to his face, putting on a look of anger at others' injustice, and immediately stood up.

"Mist, thanks. Also… sorry"
He then smiled with a troubled look.
"That just now… please forget about it"
"On condition"

Thank goodness.
Looking at his eyes, the panic Mist forcibly pinned down vanished somewhere.

BEEP, Yuuki's mysterious magic item shined.
"New skill…. don't be stingy! …. what's this, [Tamer Skill]?"
Yuuki looked to Mist and tilted his head.

"It says Human Mist"

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 28 – Tamer Skill

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/03/orejimi-28/

(※ several tens of minutes earlier)

“You’re joking— right?”

The girl who called herself Yuuki’s childhood friend told her with a hint of ridicule that she had inflicted that disgusting monster on her once again.
“Isn’t that a bad joke,” she said.

“Ufufu. Unfortunately, I’m telling the truth”
Arina said as she managed a cackling laugh.
What in the world did she find so funny?
“An improved clone made from this little guy’s cells are now taking root on Mist-chan’s magic core once again. Good for you, right? Now you can become Yuu-kun’s love slave”
“…… Why did you do something like that?”
It no longer felt real, Mist asked her a question in a normal manner.
Immediately, Arina’s expression changed.

“You’ll need antibodies”

She had seen many sides of Arina.
A cowering little girl in front of Yuuki, a friendly girl when they were alone together, and a mysterious girl carrying madness behind her scorn.
Right now she was none of those, she had put on the face of a cool-headed and sagely acquaintance.
“There’s no need for a worm like this to make you Yuu-kun’s slave. It’s just a bonus. What you need right now is resistance to these parasites you suddenly came across”
Just which one of those is the real Arina?
“These parasites are horribly defective products. If left unsupervised for too long it’ll relentlessly eat into the host’s life. It’s intolerable for a person who is to be Yuu-kun’s retainer to be weakened like that. Which is why I’m rewriting your magic core and remodelled it to a drug that repels these. That’s the purpose of

the remodelled parasite. That way the parasites will slowly be exterminated”

“….. Sorry, I’m totally not getting what you were saying….”
Arina said one complicated word after another, explaining something, but the reason Mist couldn’t understand was because this girl was treating another person’s dignity and individuality as something worthless.
“It doesn’t matter, I’ll be making you forget after all. I’m only killing time until the remodelled parasite adapts. —right, first of all, ‘*stand up and take your clothes off*‘.”
Mist stood up just as she was told.
After she took her clothes off, a chill ran on her spine, because all that was done involuntarily.
Arina probed the dumbfounded Mist’s body here and there with her fingers, checking her physical condition.
“The suggestion worked well, didn’t it. Your magic core’s and body’s remodelling will take a little more time”
She muttered to herself.

“Yuu-kun is going to return soon…. well, we’ll manage somehow. All right, ‘*put your clothes on*‘…. ah, ‘*don’t put on your underwear*‘. They’re going to get in the way later, anyway. ‘*forget they even exist*‘ ”

Mist did everything as she was told.
Arina made a pleasant smile.
It was that smile from when she felt she made a friend.
“Ye–s, now for the moment you’ve been waiting for. I’m going to give you the memory erasure suggestion! Mist-chan. Are you ready to quit being human?”

—what kind of resolve should I be having here?

In order to escape the prison, Yuuki and Mist had to somehow take care of the jailer watching them in front of the bars.
When you think of jailer, normally you’d imagine a brawny man, but that’s not the case here.
Two maids were sitting on seats, each pointing a blade at the other, smiling as they stood guard.
“Mist, you’re not allowed to move, okay–”
“If you make any suspicious moves we’ll do a double suicide you know?”

The maids gave her a warning in disregard for their own lives as if it were an ordinary warning.
To them, who were under the strong domination of the magic core parasites, orders are more important than their lives.
Yuuki and Mist were very aware that their statement was not a lie or mere threat.
“I know, I know. But let me put Yuuki to sleep. He’s tired you know”
Mist made an appeal.
“What should we do?”
“Well… Just sleeping is probably okay?”
Yuuki turned his back toward the wall and laid down, while Mist sat down next to him as if she were snuggling up to him.
This way, Mist’s back made a blind spot and Yuuki could read the E:ID phone.

“…….. you have got to be kidding me”

Yuuki muttered after reading the explanation.
Mist and Yuuki began talking, still with her back towards him.

“This skill is a skill to make Mist into a mist ability user”
“M, me?”
“Yeah. ‘*Human Mist*‘…. Is this ability supposed to be based on your name or something. Seems like when you turn to mist you can extract parasites from their host”
Hearing the explanation, Mist slowly nodded.
“In that case, cast that magic right now”
Yuuki became startled.
“No no no! This will turn you into a monster you know! Isn’t that bad!!”
“This is not the time to fuss about appearances. We have to rescue Princess and the girls”
“Even if you say so…. aren’t you scared?”
“I *am* scared. But you see…”
Mist’s face turned slightly red.
That expression that was intended for Yuuki was unfortunately unseeable from where he was.
“I, I’ll … even become a monster if it’s for Yuu-kun”

“——……”
Yuuki silently got up and tapped the entry on the E:ID phone as he sat.

[Slavetamer skill. Setup to the ‘*Human Mist*‘ !!] «TN: sic»

“Mist…. umm”
In wonderment, Yuuki said.

“Thank you. I’m happy”
“Even though you never intend to follow up on it”

[Action!!]

Flop, Mist’s clothes fell to the floor.
The clothes’ owner became ‘mist’ as advertised, and a small cloud appeared at the prison ceiling.

She transformed into a gaseous monster.

“What are you doing, Mist!!”
Noticing the abnormality, the jailers shouted.
The bars that were intended to stop people could not hold back steam.
The young girl who became mist easily escaped the prison and attacked her friends who were planning to kill each other.
She transformed into an incomplete shape like dark clouds gathering into a humanoid form, her gaseous fist then returned to that of a human and restrained the hands holding swords.

“Yuu-kun!”
The execution of her abilities themselves were under Yuuki’s control.
He nodded and chanted.
“Spark!!”
[Action!!]
BZZT BZZT, static electricity ran from Mist’s body, the maids let out a small yelp and dropped their weapons.
Mist returned to cloud form and covered the maids’ heads with her whole body.
Immediately, the maids inside the dark cloud started groaning.
The disgusting stench of the foreign objects, the parasites, detached them from their hosts.
The slug-like bodies they spat out started looking for cover.

“Like I’d let you! ‘*Strike Bubble*‘!!”

Anticipating their move, Yuuki unleashed bubbles on them from behind bars, restraining their bodies.

Returning to the form of a young girl, Mist broke the bubble and pinched the parasites with her fingers. Their disgusting bodies dried up and vanished.

” ‘*Acid*‘ !!”

Mist’s mist dissolved the prison’s lock, opening the cell.
“Come on, let’s go Yuu-kun!”
Mist returned to human form and urged Yuuki to hurry.
“Wait! Clothes! Mist, put your clothes on!”
Yuuki held out the clothes she flung away and called.
After returning from being gas to human, Mist was of course naked.
“Aaah fine!”
She grabbed the clothes from Yuuki and promptly put them on.
“All right, okay! Let’s go!”
“……, hm?”
Looking at her, Yuuki tilted his head a little, then…
“Mist-san, can I ask you something?”
“What? If you haven’t had enough of my naked body I’ll show you later. We have to hurry now!”
“No, well… Not about that…”
Yuuki tilted his head again and agonized like he’s thinking something, then he made sure his memories weren’t wrong and said

“You’re not wearing panties, are you?”
“Huh? … ‘panties’? what’s that?”

“They’re, uh, thin cloth for the immediate protection of one’s lower body…”
“Um, that just now, is it so important?”
Yuuki made his eyebrows into the shape of the letter ハ.
“So panties don’t exist in this world…?”
He muttered to himself and seems to somewhat consent.

“These *panties* are just cloth. Nothing very important right now”
He replied.

“Mist-chan. Are you ready to quit being human?”
“Wait. Let me ask you one last thing”
Because Mist, who had only been stupefied until now, asked, Arina stopped.

“—Everything is for Yuuki, right?”

“That’s right. Isn’t it obvious?”
“Naturally,” replied Arina.
Thus Mist made a big nod.
“Fine. Do as you like”
“Huuuh? What’s this, you’ve given up?”
“No way. I’ve lost lots of things and was saved by Yuuki. I’m only going to be happy if I can offer them to him. Also, Yuuki will take care of me well if it’s him”
“So you trust Yuu-kun”
“That’s what *do as you like* means, isn’t it? —Also, it’s frustrating”
“Frustrating? What is?”
“That all this is Arina-chan’s doing. Ah, I know. Here, listen to me”

Mist smiled daringly.

“*Whatever you do to me, I belong to Yuuki-san out of my own will*”

Clever Arina knows what those words mean, and strangely for her, she suddenly shivered.
Mist’s eyes were overflowing with determination.
There wasn’t any hint of the little girl who was crying just now in her.
“I declare this very minute. Even if Arina-chan erases my memory, this declaration will remain inside Arina-chan. Even if you change my personality, even if you turn me into something inhuman, this won’t change. I will go through whatever hardships for Yuuki’s sake. Got it? Remember this”

It was a smile full of resolve to oppose Arina.
It’s almost like a challenge to beat down a love rival.

“I…… I’m not going to lose”

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 29 – Careless Madam

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/05/orejimi-29/

(※ Several minutes before Mist was made into a Mist Human)

The residence rustled and Madam Welsh turned pale.
It seems that that debauched son of hers was stirring something up.
She usually lets Glenn do whatever since he's going to marry Rosé, but it's bad right now.

—*He* is in the house now.

Yuuki.
Lady Demy's lover and the man who drove back Welsh's protegé assassin.
The assassin was killed in an unimaginably horrible way, the look on his face was intensely disturbed.
Then a message for Welsh was carved on his dead body.

Do not raise your hand against me or Demy again!

Otherwise it will be your turn next!

"N…. not good, if that man gets angry, I'm done for…"
Feeling uneasy, Welsh called a maid and ordered her to protect her.
But what's going on.
Every servant answered with the same line.
[Glenn-sama says to please rest in your room]
They replied like so and went who-knows-where.
Their every single word of their replies were the same, they seem to have been prepared beforehand.

Welsh gradually felt that even that might have been Yuuki's scheme and little by little, her condition turned bad.
But now that things have gone like this, there's nothing she can do but go to her room and pray for her safety.
Overcome with vertigo, Madam went back to her room, where she met a turning point.

“Ah, Madam, good evening”

There was a braided young girl who stayed in that extravagant room all on her own.
If I’m not mistaken, she’s the maid Demy picked up along with Yuuki.
After giving her greetings to the room’s owner, while still sitting on the bed she fiddled with a foldable machine that looks like a thin book without looking her way.
It was a strange machine.
It’s equipped with lots of pushbutton-like things, each one had a symbol she’s never seen before. The other half of the machine was like shining glass.
Clatter clatter, the maid skillfully pressed the buttons with her fingertips one after the other, sometimes groaning ‘uuuuh’.
“Ah, I’m sorry for hiding here on my own”
Suddenly she gave an apologetic notice.
Normally she would have driven her out, but….
“What are you doing?”
“This is a new skill for Yuu-kun…. Ah, which one’s that damned cheeky slave’s organism code again”
What the hell is she on about.

…. But this is her chance.

The maids say that she comes from the same village as Yuuki.
Looks like she’s been his friend from a very young age.
They’re country bumpkins, they definitely treat each other like family.
In that case, if she was taken as a hostage, even Yuuki won’t be able to lay a hand.
“All right. Take it easy”
“Thank you. I only need some time now…. Aaah, remembering it makes me angry. I’m so angry I’ll laugh. No-panties punishment is too good for her. I wanted to beat her to death later but Yuu-kun *likes* her”
The country girl was grumbling something.
“I guess I’ll plant that weird fetish Yuu-kun likes while I’m remodelling her”
She’s concentrating.
She doesn’t seem to notice me moving. “Yes. Really. You can ta–ke it easy”

Madam Welsh took out a self-defense knife from the bed.

⇐ *Previous* | *TOC* | *Next* ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 30 – Arina's Stress Relief Method

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/05/orejimi-30/

If you have any experience programming computers, then you've surely experienced the frustration when things don't go well.

BZZZT [ERROR!]

The stress doubles when you're short on time.
"AAAH GEEEZ!"
Whether or not you have a way to vent this stress directly relates to how efficient your work becomes but in Arina's case, she chose the method of hitting something directly.
Well, it is of course needless to say that turning your anger towards the personal computing device before you is not a good thing to do, so because things don't settle, most people would prepare 'toys' that they can vent the full brunt of their anger at.
"Listen to what I tell you, dammit!"
Arina picked up a throwing knife she had nearby and threw it at the target with a full swing.

Fwip…, —stab!

Where and what it struck is not important at this moment.
It's enough that there's 'something to throw' and 'something to throw it at'.
There is a pile of knives lying next to Arina in bundles of ten, each time she failed her work, they would cut through the air.

BZZZT [ERROR!]
"What's wrong this time!"
Fwip…, —stab!

BZZZT [ERROR!]
"Geez, you have a grudge against me or something!?"
Fwip…, —stab!

The speed at which she worked was so divine that if any person in that line of

work were to see her they'd faint at her speed, but nevertheless, that doesn't mean everything would go well.
—— If I don't hurry Yuu-kun might get in danger. Irritation ran though Arina's mind, making her impatience grow.
Well, if he was in any real danger the E:ID phone he had is going to sound an alarm so he's probably going to be fine right now but…

BZZZT [ERROR!]
"Sheesh!"
Fwip…, —stab!

She's probably thrown around twelve knives now.
[Compile]
The new program Arina's been working on seems to finally have worked just the way she wanted it to.
"Aaah… It's finally done"
Arina made an exaggerated sigh and transmitted the data to Yuuki's E:ID phone.
snap she snapped her fingers, and the PC in front of her disappeared.
It flew into her personal dimension.
"Now then, you don't have time to be lollygagging, Arina"
Speaking to herself, Arina slapped her own cheeks to pep herself up.
"You have to work a little harder for your beloved Yuu-kun"
She then hurriedly left the Madam's room.

—SLAM.

Because of the shock of Arina closing the door, something fell limply to the floor.

It was the dead body of the room's owner, riddled with knives all over.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 31 – Imprisoned Marquis

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/06/orejimi-31/

If we do it now we still can extract the parasite from Princess' body.
So we should strike while it's hot.
Together with Mist who is pantyle… I mean, has the Human Mist ability, aimed to escape from the underground. Which reminds me, she's not wearing underwear on her upper half either, but I should stop thinking unnecessary things in an emergency like this. Yep.

"….. No good. Everyone's loitering around outside"
Mist said while she put on maid clothes again.
Mist had slipped out of a gap between the basement's large entrance doors like a ghost for reconnaissance.
"They're probably looking for Arina-chan"
"I'm beat…"
If I went out the still-brainwashed maids are going to use themselves as hostages and take me back to the cell.
In that case I'd like Mist to go rescue Princess on her own, but that's a no-go.
In any case her powers are controlled by the E:ID phone and it had a limited range.
I'd like to extract the parasites from just the maids right in front but if I did that the other maids are going to notice something strange and I don't know what they're going to do.
"…… I, I'll try to find another exit"
As I was racking my brains Mist said that and turned into mist again.
"Like there's any other way out of here"
"I don't really know, but even though this is a basement there's wind coming from that way"
"Eh. You can sense it?"
"Somehow when I turn into this body I became sensitive to airflow"

Mist fluttered and entered another cell, she entered through a crack in the end wall.

Then,
“Yuuki! Come here! Hurry!!”
Looks like she found something.

The wall at the end was not a wall.
It was an illusion made by magic or something else, touch it and you can go through, even if you’re not mist.
A passage lay beyond that.
It was probably that underground passage where the nun was.
I took out a torchlight and lit up the hallway.
“Can we get out, I wonder?”
“I can feel the flow of air. I think we can probably get out”
Mist said as she turned back to human form.
“Mist, clothes”
“Yeah, yeah”
She somehow seems like she considers putting on clothes a pain in the rear….
What happened to the girl who screamed in the bathroom.
“Ah! I have to tell you that I’m okay with being seen naked only by Yuu-kun, okay!”
“Yeah, yeah”

We started walking, relying on Mist’s senses.
“But why is the passage connected to the jails? They’re practically begging for a prison break”
“Don’t ask me…. I only work here, I don’t know about the jail structure or anything”
Well, I guess so.
According to that nun, this place is an escape path for emergencies, so it might be reasonable if one of those emergency exits is disguised as a prison.
“Ah. Armor-like monsters come out around here so be careful”
Speaking from experience, I told Mist to be careful.
“Really? Eh, wait, how do you know that?”
“Well…. one reason or another”

Though Princess Rosé did slap me that time, it was to protect me from the nun.

If she didn't do it I would've been put to trial.
She then cried her eyes out, feeling sorry she hurt my body.
It was only a few hours ago.
That Princess Rosé fell into that sleazebag's hands, what's she going through right now.
And she's even happy about it—damn bastard!

"……. Yuu-kun, I know you're angry, but…"
Mist called me out worriedly, I guess it must've showed on my face.
"Yeah, I know. I'm not down anymore"
Because Mist helped me stand back up.
She's fighting together with me for my sake, even to the point of becoming a monster.
And then Arina's still on the run somewhere.
I'm sure she must be frightened.
Both her and Rosé, I have to help right away.

I don't have time to break down.

"…… Wait, Yuu-kun"
Mist was going on ahead and found something.
She stared at the walls and touched it.
"Yuu-kun, this is a cell"
Another room hidden with magic, huh.
Just as I suspected, there are things like these in this underground passage.
"There's somebody inside…"
Mist turned into mist and disappeared into the walls.
Then she shouted in a panic.
"This is bad! Yuu-kun, let me open the lock!"
As Mist demanded, I pressed the '*Acid*' item on the [Skills] on the E:ID phone.
Just like when we escaped, the keyhole should rust away and break.
[Action!!]
—*clang*
The wall that should've been stone made a metallic sound and opened outwards like a door.

The insides of the room was the spitting image of the cell we were kept in.

Just as Mist said, somebody was lying face down on the corner.
Those clothes, I think I saw them somewhere….
“Master!”
Mist shouted and ran over.
Ah yeah. The master of the house, Marquis Isky!
He was in the prime of health when we came here, but in Mist’s arms she looked gaunt and pale. He looked like he hadn’t eaten for quite a while.
“Why is Marquis Isky being locked up in a cell? Wasn’t he with Glenn greeting Princess Rosé?”
“I don’t know”
I’m not going to be surprised at anything after this….
I touched Marquis Isky’s neck, checking for a pulse.
He’s still breathing. When I checked, Marquis let out a groan.
“Who’s there, who are you?”
“I’m Lady Demy’s servant Yuuki”
“….. Lady Demy…?”
Marquis racked his brains hearing the name, then suddenly…
“You mean Princess Rosé…!? You can’t, you mustn’t let her set foot in this residence!”
“Don’t force your body!”
Mist soothed the struggling Marquis
“You can’t. Glenn is waiting for Princess with a nefarious plot! It’s a trap, you mustn’t let Princess Rosé get here!!”

I can guess somehow.
The one we met this morning was Marquis’ impostor of some sort.
The real Marquis Isky sought out his son’s plot, failed somehow, and some time before we came here he was locked down in a cell. That should be the gist of it.

“Master….. Your son has already taken over the residence, Princess is also…”
Mist told him so and Marquis wept.
“My son is dirtying Her Highness the Princess’ body…. I have no excuse to His Highness the King who granted me this peerage…”
“No, Master. It’s still too early to cry”
Mist gripped his hand to cheer him up and said…
“We can still save the Princess now”

“It’s impossible. His plan is perfect. Nobody can stop him”
“No. I’m here with someone who can put a stop to Glenn’s rampage. Please trust in him, stay composed….”
“Him…. that servant?”
Marquis gave me a glance, and sneered in ridicule.
“That man with thin arms, what can he do. Glenn is my son, rotten as he is. The difference in strength is clear”
Well he’s certainly right.
I’m an ordinary high schooler, not even in a sports club, much less a warrior, it’s clear that I can’t win against Glenn.
“But, Yuuki is….!”
I stopped Mist who was going to cover for me.
“It doesn’t matter. I’m going to help Princess Rosé, we don’t have time, either. Marquis, the house is swarming with dominated maids so please don’t go in. Is there a hidden passage that leads to Glenn’s room?”
Marquis immediately showed a surprised face.
“…. You. You really mean to stop Glenn? He’s a descendant of Isky who’s widely known for our military service for generations, you know”
“I don’t know, but, if I give in to fear here Princess Rosé isn’t going to be saved. Also, a childhood friend of mine is cowering in the residence somewhere, I have to hurry”
I said that and Marquis looked at the ceiling, laughing languidly.
“Hahaha…. So you don’t know the name Isky. You snotty servant. But you got it right… names don’t mean squat now”
He then took out two rings from his breast pocket.
A blue ring and a red ring.
Marquis put on the red ring.
” ‘*Open*‘,” he chanted.
A pair of metal boots appeared before me.

“This ring contains invisibility magic. It can only be used once to disappear for a few seconds. That shin guard is something used when sending a fresh recruit out to the battlefield. It increases your leg strength by just a little bit. I originally hid it intending to use it to break out but …. I’m giving it to you”

“But how about Master?”

“It’s already impossible for me now. Damned Glenn cut the tendons on my legs…. I can’t even stand anymore”
He did that to his own father….

“Go. You don’t have time to worry about me. Impertinent but brave servant… make sure you save the Princess”

I nodded and received the two items, then left the underground passage.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 32 – Glenn The Vainglorious

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/06/orejimi-32/

Glenn Irish Isky was probably overflowing with talent.
To say ‘probably’ was because he had almost no chance to show his abilities and even the person himself doubted that.
And it was only recently that he noticed that fact.

So burdened was he with the name of Isky, that he raised achievements to not shame that name.
Pushing aside ridicule that he was riding on his parents’ coattails, he exterminated monsters, and though it doesn’t go so far as to merit a medal, accomplished heroic deeds, resolutely saving lives. He really risked his life when he saved Nikka.
Which is why when word about his marriage with the Princess came, Glenn self-confidently accepted the honor without a hint of hesitation. Depending on how you look at it, he might have proudly accepted it, but he did leave results worthy of wide acclaim.

—The dance party was dazzling that night.
It was a regular social gathering for nobles in name, but in reality, it was a party with the engaged Glenn and Rosé as the stars.
Glenn went toward Rosé like it was a matter of course and in the middle of attention she asked her for a dance.
Rosé smiled and went with him.
…. But Glenn was not stupid.
The first time he took her hand, he was able to immediately see through the fact that she harbored ill feeling toward himself.

In all honesty, it was a bit of a shock.

He had confidence in himself as a man and also the fruits of battle to show for it.
He felt all that was denied and as a person of character it was harsh.
Or perhaps rather than that, it was because he was not used to being denied.

Throughout his life he was able to gain success in everything well and because he never had any conspicuous failures any denial was only on the level of envy and jealousy from those below.
But at this time it was only a small uneasiness that he could keep away in his chest and put a cover on.

She's a woman that will become his wife one day.
He will resolve her ill will in time.
He privately swore.
……. one year later.
Rosé did not open up her heart to Glenn in the least.
She didn't even show signs of trying to understand each other.
The uneasiness grew inside Glenn a little at a time.

Everything became crazy when he discovered his father Malto's diary.
Even now, Glenn vaguely believed that he was surely one of the people endowed with talent.
But there was no basis for that belief.
Because all his achievements were phantom achievements where his father made preparations in secret, given to him for prestige. At times Glenn would perform his part in a put up job of defeating monsters that his father ordered.
And the worst was the marriage with the Princess was something Malto used his connections for to forcibly make the senate agree to. He thought he had gained the honor because of his own strength, but that wasn't true.

Everything crumbled away in Glenn.
None of it all were his achievements.
They were nothing but an illusion his father showed him after all.
That fact was something that denied him his own humanity.
His stature that once puffed with self-confident pride turned small and rickety, his body became heavy, like covered in lead.
The humiliation was unbearable for him who was never denied anything worth mentioning.

What caught his despaired eyes was Nikka who was posted in the Isky family chapel, who was pursuing after him.
Nikka adored him and would always give him compliments.

As he was the one who saved her life.
Glenn cherished her as a trophy of his own heroic deeds.
But the reason she was in danger in the first place was his father's schemes.
So what is this thing in front of him that adored him?

Seeing Glenn's maddened state, Nikka offered some words.
She was worried.
She was anxious for him.
She praised his past deeds, and comforted him, *have some confidence*.
—Ridiculous. The moment he thought so, something broke inside Glenn.

Nikka became his first victim.

Glenn tormented the life he saved, shamed her, and released the bindings of his lust.
In the midst of it Glenn told Nikka of the emptiness inside himself.
To vent his anger, he violently struck her frail body.
Once the deed was done, there was a crying, exhausted, dirtied woman, and a man vaguely ruminating on how his life is now ruined.

Vaguely, Ah, it's all over now.

When he thought that,
"Please, give me a little time," Nikka said.
"I will definitely return you to being a hero"
Why was she so devoted to him who raped her, he still could not understand.
She must have had some kind of pride to keep on living as Glenn's trophy.

She talked long and broad about her plan, about some ancient magic or another.
To put it simply, repeating what his father did, making him a false image of a hero.
But only one thing is different, Nikka said.
"The plot this time is one you will perform yourself. Glenn-sama will walk his own path to be a hero. Please use this Nikka. I will be a faithful tool, using every means to present you glory"
The disheveled clergywoman said so and reverently bowed.
Glenn felt something in his chest go berserk.

In Glenn's room there was the one who was to be his wife, Rosé, smiling.
Nikka's plan was a success.
With the power of the parasites she made, Glenn was able to gain a princess who submitted to his domination.
There was no longer the fiancée who pierced him with unpleasantness when he asked for a dance.
The one in front of him was a footstool to make him into a hero.
Rosé respectfully bowed.
"Please use this Rosé. I will be a faithful tool, using every means to present you glory"

He tried having her say that as a test, but it definitely suited Nikka more, Glenn thought with a cold head.

⇐ *Previous* | *TOC* | *Next* ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 33 – Fake Love

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/06/orejimi-33/

Glenn's room was on the right wing of the residence, near Madam Welsh's room.
Glenn's room interior was rather simple compared to his mother's extremely luxurious room, with only a canopy bed, a bookshelf, and also a desk and a table for two laid about.

Glenn brought the ensubordinated Rosé to that room.
Even though Rosé had changed the pink hair that was her symbol with magic and still in the form when she named herself Demy.

"Dear me, Lady Demy who called herself the Archduke's daughter turned out to be Princess Rosé. This Tris is still half in disbelief"
Tris who had nonchalantly followed them for some reason was taking a long, hard look at Rosé.
Rosé did not react. She disregarded it as though Tris himself did not exist, she instead was sinking her passionate gaze at Glenn.
"After all, Lady Demy did bring a paramour along. It's not easy to see her as Princess Rosé who does not know depravity"
"Just who decided that Rosé was a virgin?"
As Glenn said so, Tris became startled"
"T, that couldn't be. Her Unmarried Highness The Princess, the Pure Princess Rosé! I, i i i impossible!"
"I don't know, really. Nikka is not a virgin either, after all"
"Eeeh!?"
It was Glenn who stole Nikka's chastity so naturally he knew, but it's not something to spread around so he never told anyone.
But on the other hand, there was no particular need to keep it a secret.
To have been told this much even Tris started thinking.
"C, could it be Glenn-sama…"
"I'll leave that to your imagination"
Tris flapped his mouth open and closed like a fish taken out to land.

“So. How long are you going to stick around, Tris?”
Glenn asked.
“Eh, well…. We let one slip through, so until the situation calms down—”
Is he an idiot? Looks like he doesn’t understand when he’s implicitly told to leave. Glenn felt a touch of irritation.
But he suddenly receives a fresh insight, he called Rosé and whispered to her ear.
“……. certainly”
Rosé quickly replied to Glenn’s order and turned towards Tris.

“Tris. We are now going to conduct intercourse so will you please make yourself scarce?”

“I—Inter!? course!?”
The beautiful girl that was the symbol of the country brazenly told him “we’re going to have sex so scram”. The straight-laced Tris was taken aback, he started to speak so strongly he frothed.
“But still….”
Rosé brought herself really close to the panicking Tris, so close it shouldn’t be allowed for anyone besides lovers or prostitutes.
“Or do you want me to keep you company instead, Tris?”
“Hii!? T, the likes of me!?”
“Glenn-sama allows it. If so ordered, Rosé doesn’t mind doing it with anyone”
“G, G G G, Glenn-sama! This is your future wife… you jest too much!”
Seeing Tris’ face turned deep red, Glenn rapidly turned jovial.
“Hahaha, no, I don’t mind. I’m not really in love with her or anything. I only need to take her name, you can have her body”
“Something so shameless! Indulging in something like that is….”
“Tris, you don’t want to sleep with me…?”
Rosé delivered the coup de grâce with moist eyes toward Tris, but
“Hi, hiiiiiiiii!!!”
Tris ran out of the room screaming.

“—Is this okay?”
Rosé smiled and turned her head.
It was a satisfied smile of having accomplished what she’d been ordered.

“Yeah, it’s rather entertaining. … come here, I’ll sleep with you for real”
Rosé went along toward the bed as she was told.
“Um”
As she was about to take her clothes off, Rosé asked a question.
“What’s this, you’re scared now of all times?”
Rosé shook her head.
“Um…. Is it true that ‘you don’t love me’?”
“Yeah, I guess”
Glenn hated Rosé from the bottom of his heart for not responding to him.
Which is why he slapped her face until it was swollen and he didn’t even feel a twinge of guilt for making her act like a whore.
“You don’t like it?”
“If you ask that, well, yes, but this trifling thing won’t change Rosé’s feelings for Glenn-sama”
You’re just being manipulated by bugs and you try to make it look like pure love?
Disgusting. “So what is it?” said Glenn, irritated.
“I’m scared because Glenn-sama is different than before…. Last time we met you were brimming with self-confidence and had more heart. I was more than I deserve but you worked hard out of love for me”
“——……”
The time I was aiming to be a Hero on borrowed glory, huh.
She didn’t know the truth about Glenn, so it was natural that he was surprised.
“Rosé adores whichever Glenn-sama. But, when I thought Glenn-sama is having a rough time, my chest becomes painful…”
With planted emotions, Rosé was seriously worrying about Glenn.
“You’re a real pain, worrying about things like that each and every time”
“I, I humbly apologise! I spoke too forwardly….”
Rosé kowtowed.
“I will prepare myself for servicing you now…” she said as she put her hands on her own dress.
“……”
Watching that, Glenn was caught by a strange feeling.
Isn’t it appropriate for this woman to offer a love full of lies to himself who

walked a life full of lies. That thought suddenly came to his mind.

"…….. They're all lies"

"Eh?"

He suddenly talked without thinking. He never wanted to talk about it, and yet his heart jumped out of his mouth.

"My achievements. I wanted to work myself hard for it, but I couldn't accomplish anything on my own. My father had a hand in everything"

"……. Marquis Isky did…."

"That's right. Listen. It's funny. The engagement with you was also Father's plan. Was it for the house or for me, I don't know. I totally thought I was being put on the throne in recognition of my abilities. What a trashy truth"

It was discomforting in the extreme to speak out his mind, but for some reason he felt like laughing.

"My life, you see, is all full of lies. So I became this kind of human being"

As Glenn finished his talk, Rosé gripped his arm tightly while in tears.

"Ah, poor Glenn-sama…. Even though you've spent so much effort, burdened with the name of Isky, you were treated like this…"

"Effort, is it? I suppose I did do that much"

"In that case, it doesn't matter whether everything else are lies or truth. You have Rosé now. For you I will give glory in answer to your great efforts. I will even sell my heart to the devil if it's for my beloved Glenn-sama!"

So she'll do this if she falls in love with you. Glenn unconsciously made a broad smile and hastily covered it up.

In exchange, he said,

"I did tell you I don't love you though"

"Yes. If you would so much as allow Rosé to love you, that will be enough"

"…… I take that back"

Glenn softly embraced Rosé

"I love you, Rosé. I need you"

"……. Glenn ….. sama …."

It doesn't matter if it's false love.

The gaze she turned towards him was pleasant.

……. it might have been possible that Glenn loved Rosé from the very beginning.

Though because it wasn't returned and because of the destruction of his vanity it turned into this….
"Sorry I did something horrible earlier. Is your face alright?"
"Yes…….. it was a trivial thing…. Anything I receive from Glenn-sama, beating or tenderness, makes me happy…."

So she says as the two of them gazed at each other.
To be together for life, they drew their lips near—

———SLAM!!

As the two was just about to be getting affectionate with each other, the door opened.
"Glenn-sama——!!"
It was Nikka. She had a really impatient expression and was breathing roughly.
"There is a, terrible monster in, this residence! That girl, did something, unthinkable!"
"O, oi, calm down. What are you talking about?"
Rosé then became startled.
"You mean Arina, right…!"
Arina…?
That maid who ran away? "Tris is looking for her right now, isn't he?"
"No, Arina is dangerous. She can use high-class magic like the young Hero Bacchus"
"She's attacked me directly. She couldn't possibly be human!"
Rosé and Nikka talked rapidly one after the other.
"Arina did something serious to Rosé's parasite! If we don't take care of it quickly Princess' life is going to be in danger…!"
"What did you say…!"
Nikka looked around herself with a panicked look.
"I'm being chased by Arina right now! Let's meet at the underground passage laboratory!!"
She shouted and ran away.

Glenn was at a loss as to what he should do after Nikka's tempestuous appearance and her sudden warning.
"……. Glenn-sama"

There was Rosé in front of him, waiting for his orders.
Just what danger is she in….

Glenn took Rosé's hand and stood up.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 34 – Fake Marquis Isky

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/07/orejimi-34/

The effects of the ‘New Recruit’s Shin Guard’ Marquis Isky gave me was tremendous.
While it doesn’t get to the level of leaving an afterimage like in anime, it gave me an athlete’s power and running strength.

Mist and I went out of the dungeon and into the residence.
I gave Mist directions from a hidden position and ejected the parasites from the maids.
We hid the fainted maids in a room an after confirming that nobody saw us, we quickly moved.
There were a few cases where we had to stop the maids’ movements with some force.
It was almost a stealth mission game-like action.

“Carrying over 10 people is hard work as I thought…”
I grumbled while laying the maids to sleep in the dining room.
The maids rolled down to sleep on top of the carpet looked just like a refuge temple, making me feel unwell.
I saw them suffering hard when they vomited out, too….
“…. Mist, is this everyone?”
I asked, and Mist, still in her mist form, answered.
“Not everyone, I guess. I don’t know everyone here after all. …. also, Haibo and Twys aren’t here”
“….. you’re right”
We didn’t know what became of them since we were captured in the guest room.
They might even get a parasite planted in them again….

“But Mist…”
“I know. We’re not going to get anywhere like this. We have to hurry and save the Princess, right?”
After we brought down surveillance to this extent, we can afford to act a little

more flashy.
Therefore we'll go and strike at the root of all evil.
"We'll infiltrate Glenn's room"
Mist said as she jumped out of the room. She sure has it easy not having to open the door, being a gas.
The moment I opened the door to follow behind her.

"Ah, wait, Yuu-kun!"
"Hm?"
"Ah"
We abruptly met with Glenn and Princess Rosé who came down from the stairs.
Because it was all so sudden we were shocked stiff for a while.
"O, oi oi. How did you even slip out of the cell"
Glenn said.
Immediately, I felt my vision turn red.
[Ready…. Equip!]
"GET YOUR HANDS OFF OF ROSÉ YOU BASTAAAAAAAAARD!!"
This must be what they call 'flying into a rage'.
When I realized, I had already raised my sword overhead and jumped, aiming for Glenn.
"You amateurs have no skill!"
Glenn was certainly skilled.
He turned his sword straight at my charge. He knew well how to deal with that.
Not good, I'm only going to get stabbed like this, I thought.

[Emergency!!]

My body was wrapped in a bubble, stopping Glenn's sword by a hair's breadth.
Seems the E:ID phone automatically protected me.
"Tch! Don't use some weird magic tool!!"
"Get away from Glenn-sama, servant!!"
Princess Rosé jumped in front of me.
She glared at me without fear of the two blades.
"If you keep getting in the way of Glenn-sama anymore I…. Kyaaah!!"
No use talking. I gripped Princess Rosé's hand and forcibly tore her off of Glenn.
Never expecting me to take such a rough measure, Glenn and Rosé's expressions

changed.
I have Mist now.
If she could eject the parasite off of Princess it'll be our win.
"Mist!"
"Yes!"
Mist's mist wrapped Princess Rosé.
In one second the parasite would—

"*Kilowind*!!"

Wind blew, tearing Mist off of Princess Rosé.
The one who blew it wasn't Glenn who had fallen prone.
I turned my head, and there was the frightening sight of a giant swinging his sword down.
Just before the barrier gave out, I reacted and jumped aside, evading the blow.
The blade struck the floor, making the marble break with a crunching sound.
If not because of the recruit's shin guard I'd have easily been killed…!
"Muu. You evaded"
The giant looked at me and flashed a grin.
It was Marquis Isky.
No, if the one we saw in the underground dungeon was the real thing, then this must be a fake Marquis.
His body that easily towered over me was carrying a double-edged blade over one meter in length.
The bulky blade was no longer a sword, closer to an axe. Seems like it could easily hack my head off.
"You impudent manservant, don't just do as you please in our house!!"
Tris came along from way behind him and like a fox borrowing the strength of a tiger, he yelled, hurling spit everywhere, but whatever.
"Go, Glenn. I'll deal with him"
"I owe you one"
Glenn grabbed Rosé's hand and withdrew.
"Wait!" I tried to stop him, but the fake Marquis blocked my path.
"Marquis! If you allow his barbarity it will be a disgrace to the Isky family!"
Tris yelled from the sidelines.
"…. right, yeah. Keep me company for a bit, youngster"

The fake Marquis made a ‘come here’ gesture with his finger to provoke me.
So he completely believes he’s superior, does he.
“I’m afraid I have to decline—Mist!”
“OK!”
I don’t have time. First to move wins, Mist wrapped the fake Marquis’ body.
” ‘*Spark*!!’ ”
BZZZZT, Mist discharged lightning.
Several hundred bolts of electricity shot blindly.
That’s probably enough to chip off his fighting spirit, or so I thought, but I was too naïve.

“Hmmmmph!!”

The fake Marquis swung his blade around, turning around as he smashed the furniture and ornaments.
Mist was easily scattered by the pressure.
What is this bastard!
“‘*Strike Bubble*!!’ ”
“MUDAMUDAMUDA*!!”
He made a protective wall with magic or something else and shrugged the bubble off.
With that much resistance, he slowly but steadily pushed back and went towards me.
“Yuu-kun, run! He’s too strong!!”
Mist shouted.
“But, Princess Rosé!”
“We’re disadvantaged in narrow spaces!! Get outside!!”
Damn, I was so close to getting the Princess back…!!
I grit my teeth and retreated.
“Like I’m letting you go!!”
I felt the fake Marquis come in behind me.
I have confidence in my running speed because of the shin guard but there’s definitely a difference in stamina.
If we keep doing this I’ll lose sooner or later.
“Yuu-kun…., listen”
As I was running, Mist whispered in my ear.

“That magic item of yours, does it have any large-scale attacks?”
“…. Yeah, it does”
The high-output ‘*Salamander Cannon*‘ is my greatest firepower.
But it needs time to prepare and that guy won’t show me a gap that lets me shoot it at him.
“Good. I’ll make the gap. Get out through the residence’s front door”
She seems to have thought of something and didn’t have the leisure to explain.
I’ll trust Mist on this and go for the front entrance.
I kicked the door open and pressed the button on the E:ID phone.
“[Skill]…. ‘*Salamander Cannon*‘!”
[Make it to equip!]*

I grabbed the SF cannon and jumped down the steps.
The fake Marquis came after me and jumped out the house like a demon.
That moment.

“Haibo, Twys!”
““ One, two!! “”

Haibo and Twys who seems to have been waiting in front of the doors pulled a rope taut and it caught the fake Marquis’ feet.
“Nuooooh!?”
Though it’s a simple trap, even he was caught by surprise and rolled down the steps.
I’m not letting this chance go!
“All three of you get away! I’ll blow him off with everything I’ve got!”
After my warning, the maids screamed and went back inside.
The moment the fake Marquis tried to get up, I yelled.
“—E:ID phone, shoot!!”
[Action!!]

KABOOM!!

There was a thunderous roar and a shell flew.
Impact. Explosion. The sound of something breaking.
And a disorienting flash brightened the residence.

As the darkness of the night returns I saw a crater behind the black smoke.

The bombardment gouged the stairs, leaving a gaping hole.
I saw red things burning here and there, telling me that even minerals caught alight.
Let alone the target, the residence also took damage, at a glance I saw the front windows have been shattered.
The enemy should've been done in with this… but I might have gone too far.
If it didn't go well the whole residence might've been knocked down.
I looked around after I calmed down, and it seems a bubble had appeared to protect me.
The smartphone's judgement again…. what a useful thing.
I should set a barrier first next time.
I'll be fine with this, but is everyone else alright?
"Amazing…. the stairs got blown away"
Mist was floating around as mist and came to me.
"Are Haibo and Twys alright?"
"They're fine. See"
In the direction Mist pointed, there were Haibo and Twys running.
They probably went out from another door. They don't look injured.
"It seems I can defend, too"
Looks like Mist wrapped those two and protected them.
"You did well to contact them"
"The first time I failed and the fake Marquis blew me away, I found those two hiding"
It was probably because it was those three that they could grasp the situation within the short time and act.
"Now I wonder how I can explain to them how my body became this way…"
She sounded troubled.
"That's my fault…. I'm sorry"
"Ah, I, I'm not regretting it, no! But…, huh?"
Mist stopped talking.
"……, Y, Yuu-kun"
"What's wrong?"
"What should we do, that guy, isn't dead yet"

BANG!

A carbonised hand stretched out from underneath the crater.
It did an eagle grip on the ground and slowly exposed its body.
The carbonized, pitch black body became a giant that does not bear the slightest resemblance to the time it took on the form of Marquis Isky.
With a rough appearance it looked down towards me.
Its head was at about the height of a basketball ring.
He's over three meters, isn't he…?
"Y, Yuu-kun. You can shoot that thing again… can't you?"
Mist asked me timidly.

You idiot.
I'd have done it already if I could….

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Having been helped by his father's fake, Glenn was able to escape Yuuki's pursuit.
He took Rosé along and went into the underground passage.
Then in the darkness, he went towards Nikka's research lab like he knows the way by heart.
"Are you sure you're going to leave that person just like that?"
Rosé asked him as they walked.
"Yuuki is certainly going to get in the way of Glenn-sama"
"That servant is no match for me"
Rather than that, I'm more worried about you now, he swallowed his words as he reached his destination.

The door to the laboratory was disguised as a wall.
Was it a precaution against the "Arina" girl Nikka and Rosé mentioned?
She didn't look like much a threat when he let her go back in the guest room….
Glenn knocked the door.
"Nikka, I'm coming in"

……. There was no response.
“Glenn-sama, is this really Sister Nikka’s laboratory here?”
Rosé probably saw this as nothing but a normal wall.
She said so worriedly.
“Yes. That’s true”
Glenn then opened the door. The smell of sulfur drifted about.

There were test tubes and drugs laid all over the place, as if in the middle of an experiment.
Also, there was the eerie sight of the beaker containing the magic core and wriggling bugs.
Nikka was not inside.
To begin with, why did Nikka call Glenn out all the way here.
What is she going to do to Rosé…?
He tilted his head as he proceeded inside the room.
“I’m late!”
The aforementioned Nikka appeared.
“Nikka. Where have you been loafing around?”
Glenn rebuked her with a slightly strong tone.
“My apologies”
Nikka gave a very deep bow in apology.
“It was painful waiting for Glenn-sama to lead me here so I left to take care of other small stuff”
“….. Huh?”
What is she saying.
“What are you talking about”
“Princess Rosé”
Ignoring the dubious Glenn, Nikka went by Princess Rosé’s side and took a beaker.
“Thanks for your work. You can spit it out now,” she said as she smiled.
Rosé snatched the beaker from her and looked to the sky, then she spat out mucus.
“How are you feeling?”
“……..”
Rosé wiped her lips and took a deep breath.

“The worst”

She fired a hateful glare at Glenn.
Her wistful eyes full of passion earlier was replaced by a dry look of hatred.
Spit it out…. she made her spit it out!?
“Nikka, what are you doing!!”
“You still haven’t noticed? That head of yours is unfortunate indeed”
Nikka snapped her fingers.
Immediately a black vortex appeared and something came out of it, hitting Glenn in the chest.
“Guuh!?”
His body that prepped up for a surprise attack was thrown outside the room.
His back hit the wall and he fell to the floor.
He thought he was hit with a log or something, but that wasn’t right.
It’s a person…. no, no way.

The projectile was a tied-up Nikka!

Her body was bound with rope, and a ball-like gag full of holes was forced into her mouth.
She then looked sadly up at Glenn.
If this is Nikka on my knees, then who is that…. “— are you ‘Arina‘ ?”
“Corre–ct. Buut your time was up”
Fake Nikka snapped her fingers and was wrapped in light, turning into a young girl in maid clothes.
At a glance she looked like a plain girl with her hair done in two long braids, but anyone who saw her smile would feel chills running down their spine.
I can see right through you, the demonic smile whispers.
“I finally found it. I’ve been looking for this laboratory. I want to know about the bugs, nobody else should know about this”
Arina walked, skipping happily, looking over Nikka’s studies.
“This may only be used for Yuu-kun’s sake. Ufufu. I’ll make a world for Yuu-kun with this”
She frolicked like a giggling little girl.

What’s happening, what’s she doing.
What the hell is that girl over there. Glenn tore off Nikka’s gag to ask her for

information.
“— please run away, Glenn-sama!!”
That was the first thing Nikka said as her mouth became free.
“We shouldn’t cross her, please, run away!”
“Like hell I’m going to run! She took Rosé away from me!”
“Please don’t treat people like things”
Rosé said to him calmly.
The slight cracking of her voice told him that she’s suppressing her anger.
There was not a single trace of the face that looked at him with love earlier.
“….. Damn it!”
Glenn grabbed Nikka by the collar and shouted.
“Why don’t your bugs work on Rosé!!”
“Don’t blame her too much, she’s too pitiful. Nikka worked rea–lly well you know”
Arina said as she tore off the research materials and put it in her pocket.
“Unfortunately…”

Then Arina cracked a grin.

“Arina got to dominate Princess Rosé before you♪”
Arina snapped her fingers, undoing the blonde Lady Demy disguise, Princess Rosé’s hair returned to the color known by the people.
” ‘On your knees‘ ”
“……”
Rosé made a listless face but she resignedly fell to her knees in front of Arina and put her hand on her chest. It was the pose of a knight pledging loyalty to their lord.
“….. You put it in me in the coach, didn’t you”
Rosé said, still in the pose.
“Corre–ct. Excellent excellent♪”
Arina pat Rosé on the head and praised her sweetly.

It wasn’t an accident that Arina undid Lady Demy’s disguise in the coach on the way to the Isky Residence.
It was preliminary work in order to plant a bug on her later on.
“Ah. Please don’t call it a bug like your primitive parasite. These are

micromachines made with advanced engineering, you see”

“Don’t screw with me!!”

Glenn shouted, his voice showing his objection.

“So…. what was that with Rosé up until just now! She was truly in love with me!!”

” ‘Truly in love with you‘ ?”

Rosé abruptly stood up and glared at Glenn.

“You’re seriously saying that being induced by drugs and monsters true love?”

“B, but… just a little more and I…”

“If I didn’t do that it doesn’t look like you’re going to come here”

She made him think he obtained Rosé and dressed up as Nikka to make him lead her to the laboratory.

Everything was dancing on top on Arina’s palm.

“Praise Nikka for this. I thought I wanted to make her confess but she was willing to bite her tongue and die”

“….. My…. apologies…”

Nikka said as she hung her head down.

“That girl knew everything. Our plan, Princess Rosé’s domination. I should’ve noticed sooner and told Glenn-sama…”

“……. Just who the hell are you….”

In answer to Glenn, Arina threw him a book

The book’s title was [The History of the Isky Kingdom, Volume 1].

“….. Isky…. Kingdom?”

Glenn flipped the book open.

The words and language used is a little different that what Glenn’s used to but he was able to read a few bits here and there. According to this, Glenn will in several years obtain this country and be praised as a Hero for killing Demon Queen Rosé.

What the hell is this book…. “That’s a history textbook from a thousand years from now. A book of the history you ‘should have been’ going to go through,” Arina said as she snatched the book back.

“Y, you…” Glenn said, half in disbelief.

“You’re saying, you came here from the future?”

“Yes, correct aga–in”

Arina cracked a happy smile.

“But you see, The Hero who defeated Demon Queen Rosé, don’t you think that title would be perfect for Yuu-kun?”

«TN: Original title is Invader from The Future»

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 35

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/07/orejimi-35/

Having been helped by his father's fake, Glenn was able to escape Yuuki's pursuit.
He took Rosé along and went into the underground passage.
Then in the darkness, he went towards Nikka's research lab like he knows the way by heart.
"Are you sure you're going to leave that person just like that?"
Rosé asked him as they walked.
"Yuuki is certainly going to get in the way of Glenn-sama"
"That servant is no match for me"
Rather than that, I'm more worried about you now, he swallowed his words as he reached his destination.

The door to the laboratory was disguised as a wall.
Was it a precaution against the "Arina" girl Nikka and Rosé mentioned?
She didn't look like much a threat when he let her go back in the guest room….
Glenn knocked the door.
"Nikka, I'm coming in"
……. There was no response.
"Glenn-sama, is this really Sister Nikka's laboratory here?"
Rosé probably saw this as nothing but a normal wall.
She said so worriedly.
"Yes. That's true"
Glenn then opened the door. The smell of sulfur drifted about.

There were test tubes and drugs laid all over the place, as if in the middle of an experiment.
Also, there was the eerie sight of the beaker containing the magic core and wriggling bugs.
Nikka was not inside.
To begin with, why did Nikka call Glenn out all the way here.
What is she going to do to Rosé…?

He tilted his head as he proceeded inside the room.
“I’m late!”
The aforementioned Nikka appeared.
“Nikka. Where have you been loafing around?”
Glenn rebuked her with a slightly strong tone.
“My apologies”
Nikka gave a very deep bow in apology.
“It was painful waiting for Glenn-sama to lead me here so I left to take care of other small stuff”
“….. Huh?”
What is she saying.
“What are you talking about”
“Princess Rosé”
Ignoring the dubious Glenn, Nikka went by Princess Rosé’s side and took a beaker.
“Thanks for your work. You can spit it out now,” she said as she smiled.
Rosé snatched the beaker from her and looked to the sky, then she spat out mucus.
“How are you feeling?”
“……..”
Rosé wiped her lips and took a deep breath.

“The worst”

She fired a hateful glare at Glenn.
Her wistful eyes full of passion earlier was replaced by a dry look of hatred.
Spit it out…. she made her spit it out!?
“Nikka, what are you doing!!”
“You still haven’t noticed? That head of yours is unfortunate indeed”
Nikka snapped her fingers.
Immediately a black vortex appeared and something came out of it, hitting Glenn in the chest.
“Guuh!?”
His body that prepped up for a surprise attack was thrown outside the room.
His back hit the wall and he fell to the floor.
He thought he was hit with a log or something, but that wasn’t right.

It's a person…. no, no way.

The projectile was a tied-up Nikka!

Her body was bound with rope, and a ball-like gag full of holes was forced into her mouth.
She then looked sadly up at Glenn.
If this is Nikka on my knees, then who is that…. "— are you 'Arina' ?"
"Corre–ct. Buut your time was up"
Fake Nikka snapped her fingers and was wrapped in light, turning into a young girl in maid clothes.
At a glance she looked like a plain girl with her hair done in two long braids, but anyone who saw her smile would feel chills running down their spine.
I can see right through you, the demonic smile whispers.
"I finally found it. I've been looking for this laboratory. I want to know about the bugs, nobody else should know about this"
Arina walked, skipping happily, looking over Nikka's studies.
"This may only be used for Yuu-kun's sake. Ufufu. I'll make a world for Yuu-kun with this"
She frolicked like a giggling little girl.

What's happening, what's she doing.
What the hell is that girl over there. Glenn tore off Nikka's gag to ask her for information.
"— please run away, Glenn-sama!!"
That was the first thing Nikka said as her mouth became free.
"We shouldn't cross her, please, run away!"
"Like hell I'm going to run! She took Rosé away from me!"
"Please don't treat people like things"
Rosé said to him calmly.
The slight cracking of her voice told him that she's suppressing her anger.
There was not a single trace of the face that looked at him with love earlier.
"….. Damn it!"
Glenn grabbed Nikka by the collar and shouted.
"Why don't your bugs work on Rosé!!"
"Don't blame her too much, she's too pitiful. Nikka worked rea–lly well you

know”
Arina said as she tore off the research materials and put it in her pocket.
“Unfortunately…”

Then Arina cracked a grin.

“Arina got to dominate Princess Rosé before you♪”
Arina snapped her fingers, undoing the blonde Lady Demy disguise, Princess Rosé’s hair returned to the color known by the people.
” ‘On your knees‘ ”
“……”
Rosé made a listless face but she resignedly fell to her knees in front of Arina and put her hand on her chest. It was the pose of a knight pledging loyalty to their lord.
“….. You put it in me in the coach, didn’t you”
Rosé said, still in the pose.
“Corre–ct. Excellent excellent♪”
Arina pat Rosé on the head and praised her sweetly.

It wasn’t an accident that Arina undid Lady Demy’s disguise in the coach on the way to the Isky Residence.
It was preliminary work in order to plant a bug on her later on.
“Ah. Please don’t call it a bug like your primitive parasite. These are micromachines made with advanced engineering, you see”

“Don’t screw with me!!”
Glenn shouted, his voice showing his objection.
“So…. what was that with Rosé up until just now! She was truly in love with me!!”
” ‘Truly in love with you‘ ?”
Rosé abruptly stood up and glared at Glenn.
“You’re seriously saying that being induced by drugs and monsters true love?”
“B, but… just a little more and I…”
“If I didn’t do that it doesn’t look like you’re going to come here”
She made him think he obtained Rosé and dressed up as Nikka to make him lead her to the laboratory.
Everything was dancing on top on Arina’s palm.

“Praise Nikka for this. I thought I wanted to make her confess but she was willing to bite her tongue and die”
“….. My…. apologies…”
Nikka said as she hung her head down.
“That girl knew everything. Our plan, Princess Rosé’s domination. I should’ve noticed sooner and told Glenn-sama…”
“……. Just who the hell are you….”
In answer to Glenn, Arina threw him a book
The book’s title was [The History of the Isky Kingdom, Volume 1].
“….. Isky…. Kingdom?”
Glenn flipped the book open.
The words and language used is a little different that what Glenn’s used to but he was able to read a few bits here and there. According to this, Glenn will in several years obtain this country and be praised as a Hero for killing Demon Queen Rosé.
What the hell is this book…. “That’s a history textbook from a thousand years from now. A book of the history you ‘should have been’ going to go through,” Arina said as she snatched the book back.
“Y, you…” Glenn said, half in disbelief.

“You’re saying, you came here from the future?”

“Yes, correct aga–in”
Arina cracked a happy smile.
“But you see, The Hero who defeated Demon Queen Rosé, don’t you think that title would be perfect for Yuu-kun?”

«TN: Original title is Invader from The Future»

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 36 – First Heir to The Throne Rosé

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/07/orejimi-36/

Defeating the Demon Queen who temporarily dominated the world and giving the past to Yuuki.
That was Arina's plan.
To go to Ivan Castle several days before Rosé historically went mad and plant her with micromachines before she became the Demon Queen to control her.
The to-be Hero Glenn can be made a close aide.
That's what she thought.
But she met with Rosé along the way, and she noticed that history differed greatly from how it was told.
The year Rosé became a Demon Queen seems to be later than the studies say.
What's more, the Hero King Glenn of all people seems to have came into being out of a plan similar to Arina's, a totally fake existence.

"Rejoice. Originally your cheap plan would have been realized in time"
Arina said with a smile.
"But unfortunately. Since just now it belongs to Arina…. no, to Yuu-kun"
"— that's—absurd!"
Glenn trembled in anger.
That's because, in other words.
The plan Nikka crafted was supposed to be successful.
He gained Rosé, and the kingdom also became his own, moreover he was praised even a thousand years in the future as a Hero.
All that came to nothing because of what this invader from the future did.
Is that how it is? "Stop screwing with me…"
Like hell I'll take this lying down! "N, no, you can't, Glenn-sama!!"
"STOP SCREWING WITH ME!!"
Not listening to Nikka, Glenn took out his sword and jumped at Arina.
" 'Binding Magic' "
Arina chanted.
Immediately something caught Glenn's body.

It was an arm.
Arms appeared out of nowhere, grabbing Glenn's arms, legs, and torso and pulled him with a strong force, pinning him to the wall.
"The hell is this!? G, get off of me!"
"Now then, shall we give you your punishment for severely insulting Yuu-kun? After that we'll also have you make up for the crime of doing as you please with Yuu-kun's own Princess Rosé"
As she was saying that, Arina took the drugs that were all over the place and put them in a beaker.
She stirred it with a rod and thrusted it at Glenn, then said.

"He–re, now for a last quiz. If Glenn drinks this drug that Arina casually mixed, what will happen to him?"

Poof, the beaker's contents spewed a foul-smelling smoke.
"Hii!!?"
"What will it be, I wonder. I hope you like the taste"
Arina jokingly came close to him.
"STOP IT, I'll drink it! So, please, spare Glenn-sama…!!"
Not listening to Nikka's sorrowful pleas, Arina cackled laughter as she walked closer.

"Please wait"

But somebody stood in her path, it was Rosé.
"Huh? What's wrong? You want to help this guy?"
"No way, not a chance. He has to be brought to Ivan Castle to be properly judged"
"Huh?"
Arina tilted her head in doubt.
"…. Princess Rosé, didn't he do horrible things to you. Nobody's seeing us right now, so you can take revenge on him as you like"
Rosé quietly shook her head.
"Royalty are the head of the country who administer law to the people. No matter how much I hate him I can not allow vigilantism based on emotion"
Princess Rosé resolutely declared as the first heir to the throne.
"This man's crimes should be judged according to law. I can't allow your selfish

reason and method in punishing him”
“……”
Arina became dumbfounded for a little while and fell silent.

But.

“Pffft!”
She suddenly burst into laughter.
“AH HA HA HA HA HA!!”
She held down her sides with laughter.
“— Is it really so funny?”
“No, I think it’s good, something like this. How should I say it, princessy? Ah, but you are a princess, sorry sorry, kukuku. ….. but you know.”
She switched from a frank laugh to an eerie chuckle.

“It’s not good for your health to lie to yourself, you know?”

“…..!”
Princess Rosé became frightened and stepped back.
“Stop…. what are you trying to do…?”
“Nothing, I won’t do anything strange”

” ‘Just‘ ”

” ‘Be honest with yourself‘ ”

“——!”
Twitch, Rosé twitched for an instant.
She then slowly turned her head around and said….

“Why are you still alive?”

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 37 – Princess' Tirade Full-Course Set

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/07/orejimi-37/

Being ordered to '*be honest with herself*', Rosé cast off her pride and sense of duty as a member of royalty.

"Hey, why are you still alive. Stop fooling around"
In a complete turnabout from her [Glenn should be judged and punished by law], she vented the hatred seething from the bottom of her heart on Glenn.
"……."
Glenn made a pained face seeing his fiancée's change.

"Hero Glenn? Demon Queen Rosé? A statue built a thousand years from now? AHA, AHAHA, AHAHAHAHAHAA…."

Rosé let out a dry laugh like she's having spasms.
WHAM!
"—— Don't *fucking* kid with me!"
She slammed her fist on a table and yelled.
Some glass utensils rolled down and broke from the reaction.

"Don't *fuck* with me!! You *made* people swallow this bug and tried to *sleep* with me!! You made me *seduce* the butler like a *whore*!! You *slapped* my face until it swelled!! — *why* are you even still alive!?"
"R, Rosé…. I…"
Glenn noticed that he changed his mind and truly loved her now.
He wanted to tell her that, but…
"NOOOOOOO! *Don't talk to me*, it's *revolting*!!"
She stopped him with her voice, holding her head half-crazed.
Arina was rolling with laughter.
Like a viewer enjoying an ironic comedy.

"Don't *talk*, don't *speak* —— *Don't breathe in my general direction*!! I don't even *want* to breathe the same air as you!! It's *filthy*!!"
Rosé's tirade was now beyond stopping.
She spewed out all the hatred for him that she'd had piled up.

“You’re *disgusting*! I’m getting goosebumps just *looking* at you!!”

“My guts said you’re no good *right* from the beginning! You’re so *small minded* and yet you’re a narcissist enough to even play the hero!! You’re not even *aware* you’re just a big baby the Marquis pampers!! And you had the *gall* to ask me for a dance!?”

“You ever seen that huge tower near the Cotail territory? Dancing with you was *that* embarrassing!! I’d rather be *locked up* in prison there!”

“——I was always worrying when you’d give up”

” why ”

” do I have to ”

” marry this fucking guy !? ”

“Ahahahaha, see? I was right about you being *trash*! I want *everyone* to see how you look now!! Just who the hell is a ‘*promising young lad from the blood of Isky*‘!! Aren’t you just *trash* that’s rotten to the bone!! A *self-centered, self-righteous, trash*!”

“All your achievements are lies, you say? I’ll tell you what, *you’re* the only one *dumb* enough not to notice!!”

“Please, enough——!!”
Nikka shouted.
“Please, stop…! Glenn-sama, Glenn-sama can’t take it anymore…”
“*I’m* the one who can’t take it anymore! It’s driving me *crazy*!!”
Rosé’s anger was as unstoppable as a war chariot.
Nikka’s touch of resistance was nothing before it.
“This guy…. this *fucking* guy… he almost made me sleep with him…! He *fondled* me, he *forced* me to swear to love him on the bed!! …. what crime did I do to deserve this…!”

“I can’t take it anymore…… it’s so *disgusting* I can’t stop shaking….!! Uee….!”

“Yuuki-san…. I’m scared….”

“…… That’s right. Yuuki-san….”
Suddenly realizing something, Rosé called the young man’s name.

“I’ve never been so happy to be with a boy before”
“He sees things from the way I saw them. He humored me whatever selfishness I had. He jumped into danger for me”
“He wiped my tears away. He gave me a gentle hug”
“And yet, why…”

“……. hey”

Rosé stepped up to Glenn.
She then made a feeble smile and asked him.

“*Why* aren’t you Yuuki-san? It would’ve been good if you were Yuuki-san. If Yuuki-san were my fiancé…. nothing would be better”

She then gripped Glenn’s collar and said bluntly.

“Change into Yuuki-san!
Become Yuuki-san!
What’s wrong? Hurry! Now!
What’s wrong with taking that responsibility? Aren’t you my fiancé!?
Reflect on it a little!
If you’re sorry then change into Yuuki-san!
Your name, your voice, your face, your body, your life, your memories, your every drop of blood!!
Yuuki-san is way better than Glenn!!
I’ll teach Yuuki-san to dance!
I’m sure he’s going to make shaky steps.
That’s why he’s cute, not like you!!
Yuuki-san taught me about the future!
He told me looots of things about a world I didn’t know!
Not like your narrow minded self!
I’ll go anywhere if it’s with Yuuki-san!
With him I’ll have lots and lots of new experiences, it’s going to be really fun!!
Not like you!!
Yuuki-san, Yuuki-san, I want Yuuki-san!!”

“It’s your fault Yuuki-san hates me now!! Take responsibility and transform into Yuuki-san!!”

“What magic to cast to make you change? What drug to drink to make you change? How much money to pay to make you change?”

“Change will you! Change…!!”
“Changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechange”

“Please, become Yuuki-san”
“Why won’t you change?”
“Beco–me Yuuki-san!! Beco–me Yuuki-san!!”
“Change, will you… please…”
“I don’t want Glenn, I want Yuuki-san! I don’t want Glenn, I want Yuuki-san!”
“Please.. Please”
“Die Glenn, become Yuuki-san! Die Glenn, become Yuuki-san!! Die Glenn, please become Yuuki-san!
“Aaah, marrying Yuuki-san is going to make me *so* happy. Glenn should just disappear”
“I, I’ve never ever cooked in my life but I want to cook for Yuuki-san. Glenn should just disappear”
“No, yeah, hey me, what are you doing saying marriage this marriage that so selfishly. You’re too ecstatic… it’s embarrassing. Aah, geez, Glenn should just disappear!”
“Yuuki-san… will you please accept my feelings? If I say I love you you’ll be troubled, won’t you? Woe is me for being born royalty like this, I don’t know what to do…”
“Glenn, hurry up and disappear! Don’t ever enter my sight again! Rather, hurry up and change!! You useless!!”

“Changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechangechange changechangechange”

“….. That’s right, Arina-san!”
Princess Rosé had been gripping Glenn’s neck, rocking it back and forth for several minutes while she made her pleas, but she suddenly remember something and called Arina.
“Eh? Arina?”
Arina who was suddenly called out by the show was caught off guard.
“Hey, you of all people can do it, can’t you!? Make this guy into Yuuki-san! You’re not fair, hogging Yuuki-san all for yourself! Use him as material and make me a Yuuki-san too! I’ll give you anything for one!!”

“Ah, I see…”
Arina nodded to her in assent.
“I’m sorry. I know how you feel so well it hurts, but it looks like it’s impossible,” she said, shrugging her shoulders.
“Because that guy is dead already”
“Eh……”
Rosé slowly released Glenn’s neck.
Released from her grip, Glenn slumped onto the ground.
He seems to have died. He fell and rolled on the ground without any resistance.

“No…. no way…”

Rosé looked at her own hand, trembling all over.
She probably never expected him to die.
It was a huge shock for someone to die right before her eyes.
Rosé started to tear up in dread and said….

“*Gross*…. don’t *die* when I’m holding you…”

«TN: Whew, that was cathartic»

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 38 – Giant Fist

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/08/orejimi-38/

Even though Glenn died right before her eyes, Rosé doesn't know what made him die.
Did he bite his tongue? Did he die from being choked by Rosé who was in a daze? Did she rock his head too strongly it hit something? Was he unable to take the abuse and his soul chose to die?
But to Rosé, whatever caused this man to die doesn't matter.

"Glenn —— sama —— !!"
Nikka hugged Glenn who had turned cold from his agonizing death.
"Ah, that was funny"
Arina loudly clapped her hands as if saying the show is over.
"Princess Rosé, '*I'm cancelling the suggestion*' "
"——!"
Rosé twitched once again and returned to sanity.

She'd yelled out some really absurd things.
So this is what they call discarding your fetters and letting loose your true feelings and desires.
As she looked down at Glenn's remains, Rosé said…
"…… I thought killing a person would have had more of an impact"
Even now that she had returned to sanity, Rosé still reacted to Glenn's death, which she caused herself, like someone else's problem. She was surprised at herself for it.
"I heard that even the most abominable soldier would be shaken on their first kill…. Is this Arina-san's doing?"
"Don't blame everything on Arina"
Arina said as she looked over the laboratory's research material.
This invader from the future, despite rolling in laughter watching Rosé's tirade on Glenn, now seems to have no interest at all.
"It's simple. Princess doesn't think of him as a person anymore. You were thinking about killing a pest or something, weren't you? Ah, scary, scary"

“I see”
The problem disappeared.
So she finally no longer saw Glenn as a person.
Otherwise she wouldn’t have made the unreasonable demand for him to ‘become Yuuki-san’.

“*Fuck you*——!! You *murderer*!!”
Nikka who was holding on to Glenn shouted.
“The heavens will punish you!!”
“Those words, I’ll return them to you as they are. Sister Nikka”
Rosé responded without making a move.
“The law will shine on and judge the crimes you have committed with Glenn. — Arina-san, please don’t meddle too much this time”
As she warned Arina, she said…
“But she insulted Yuu-kun. Killing her normally isn’t enough”
“Making her see Glenn die is enough, I think? It should be torture for her to continue on living”
“Hmm. …. well, alright”
She said as she turned her attention elsewhere.
“This man’s death will be your punishment but, please apologise to the maids you rolled up in this”
“….. Unforgivable…., I’ll never forgive you….”
Not listening to what Rosé said at all, Nikka shouted her grudges, looking like a monster.
“You’re the reason Glenn-sama broke down in the first place…. Give him back, give back the Glenn-sama who was aiming to be a hero…. Glenn-sama who was working hard enough to be your husband…. Glenn-sama who I’ve been longing for…”
“Umm, I think she’s probably a goner, too?”
“…….”
Rosé was at a loss for words. She could not fathom how in the world a person could love Glenn so much. But it’s true that she did snatch away something she held dear.
She thought she should say something in apology, but then…
“SAY SOMETHING, YOU *MURDERER*!!”

Nikka jumped at Rosé with her restrained body.
“Princess Rosé, watch out”
Then Arina pulled Rosé into the laboratory with a mysterious power.
She thought *danger* referred to Nikka but that was not the case.

KABLAAAAM!!

The ceiling collapsed, the hallway in front of the laboratory was buried in rubble.
A giant fist pierced the ground, falling down right on top of Nikka.
The fist then returned to the sky.
What happened, she looked up at the ceiling, and her eyes somehow met with Yuuki’s.
“P, Princess Rosé! You were here…! Is there anyone injured!?”
He seems to be fighting some giant monster.
She can hear the voice of the maid called Mist, as well.
“…… umm”
She thought with her trembling brain cells to tell him *you crushed Nikka and Glenn*.
“…….. No. Nobody injured”
She answered, realizing that she shouldn’t give him any undue stress.
“I see, good then. …. Please wait, I’ll defeat this guy and come save you!!”
Yuuki shouted and went away somewhere.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 39 – Monster and Nuclear Missile Punch

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/08/orejimi-39/

“WOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!”

The monster that ‘was’ fake Marquis howled in the moonlit night.

Its body tht was several times larger than a human’s was black as a shadow and it had a hazy silhouette.

It looked like a humanoid apparition at first glance, but its joints were ambiguous, bending in every direction like a rubber doll.

The monster flexed its arm like a whip and threw punches.

It would sometimes enlarge random parts of its body, like for instance, making its arm like a hammer when striking.

The attack that collapsed the underground passage’s ceiling was one of those.

——CRAAASSSH!!

“Eeeek. You punched a hole, oi!!”

I shrieked while I peered into the hole in the ground it opened.

If Mist didn’t steal its vision in the nick of time I would’ve turned into mincemeat right about now.

The hole seemed to go through to the underground passage, I remember seeing the wall I saw behind the dust cloud.

Then from there out popped the face of a person I didn’t think I’d see.

“P, Princess Rosé!”

She had gone off somewhere with Glenn but somehow she was there in the underground passage.

She widened her eyes, confused as to what happened, and looked up my way.

She had changed her hair from the Lady Demy hairstyle to Princess Rosé’s somewhere along the way.

“Is there anyone injured!?”

Being asked a question Princess Rosé made a slightly perturbed look.

Right, I see, Princess is still under Glenn’s brainwashing….

“What are you doing Yuu-kun!?”

As I was hesitating slightly, Mist came with a warning.
She transformed back and forth between her original and mist bodies to somehow catch the monster's attention.
Her original body was near the monster but it seems she can talk anywhere her mist form could reach.
"There's Princess Rosé down there!"
"Eeeh!? Why's she in a place like that!?"
"Like I'd know why! But she *is* there!"
"I, I know how you feel but we don't have the time to take her back right now!"
Mist is right.
I have to do something about the fake Marquis first.
Princess Rosé then turned towards me and said
"Umm, no, nobody injured"
……at least she was able to answer me in her state.
Right.
"…Please wait here, I'll beat this guy and come help you!!"
I declared and I left so that the monster doesn't attack the same place again.

"Yuu-kun, do you think you can win?"
Mist asked me while she flanked the enemy.
I only have one way to win.
Waiting for the E:ID phone to recharge and hit the monster with the next blow.
I said as much.
"……. but you couldn't finish it off with that…"
She hit me right where it hurts.
"Sorry, I have nothing but this. All that remains is to pray for the phone to pop up a new skill"
"Do those skills pop up just like that?"
"Yeah, this guy's a pretty fickle one—,"

Bleep.

[A New Skill Has Been Released]

"……."
"……."
Umm, what?

Does this thing work while listening to people talk?
“….. It’s really a fickle guy, huh. It was the same that time with me, as well…”
“Stop fooling around each and every time, you should’ve popped this out earlier!!”
“Wait wait…. calm down. So, what kind of magic is it?”
“Um….”

[‘*Nuclear Missile Punch*‘]

“…… T, the hell is thiiiiiiiiiiiiiiis!?”
Nuclear Missile Punch? Did a grade schooler make this!!
[How to use: Nuclear Missile Punch hits the enemy with a reaaaaally powerful punch. Even a huge enemy gets blown away in one hit. You have to be careful because you’ll fly away if you miss]
……. even the explanation is kiddy, I’m beat.
“WOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!”
“Yuu-kun, watch out!!”
Crap, while I was letting my guard down the monster was swinging down his fist not at Mist but at me.
A pitch black object was coming down at me.
” ‘*Defense Magic*‘ !!”
When I thought I was done for, something pushed through between it and me.
I know those long braids, that maid clothed girl.

—— It was Arina!

Arina took the enemy’s blow with a shining wall, protecting me.
“Yuu-kun, s, sorry I’m late!!”
She turned her head and showed me a smile.
“Nice timing! I’m going to blow it away, cover me!”
“Yes!”
I rolled and ran towards my huge enemy.
” ‘*Rock Magic*‘ !!”
Arina chanted and throwing stones appeared out of nowhere.
It can’t do much more than act as a distraction, but that’s enough.
“WOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!”
After flinching for an instant, the monster caught me in his sight and as if he

found his prey, he swung his fist down.
“Mist!!”
“Yes!!”
Mist’s mist wrapped me.
Then I took out the ring I got from the real Marquis and put it on.
Having lost sight of me, the monster’s fist hit empty ground uselessly.
—— Now!!
“[Skill] ‘Nuclear Missile Punch’ ”
[‘Nuclear Missile Punch’ Emulator Set Up!]
My right fist became wrapped in something red and aura-like
Looks like I just have to hit him with this.
The moment my invisibility wore off, I jumped underneath the monster.
“UUUOOOOOOOOOOHHH!! TAKE THIIIS!!”
[Action!!]
I hit the enemy with an uppercut aimed at the head.
At the moment of impact, BAM, the enemy shook.
Then BOOM, it was launched to the end of the sky.
“No way…”
I heard a speechless voice from Mist, who had been watching.
Looks like it wasn’t called nuclear missile for nothing….

…… well, I think nuclear missiles work differently, though.

Anyway, we managed to finish it off.
“… arigatou, Arina. That was dangerous… eh?”
… Arina wasn’t there.
She ran off somewhere again.

The black monster called the fake Marquis Isky flew through the night sky as if to defy gravity.
But once it pierced through the clouds, it suddenly grew giant wings and got itself under control.
“… understood, Master”
It nodded, seemingly having received somebody’s order, and turned its body to the ground.
“Counterattack start,” it muttered, then went towards the ground like it was

diving into the sea…——
But its dive was suddenly stopped.
A small, really small ‘obstacle’ stopped its dive in the air.
Braided hair waved in the high pressure wind brought by the blow.
Not minding the freezing air, she was calm and composed.
As the monster raised its fist, not lett its target get away, Arina made a wide grin.
“I don’t have much time but don’t worry. I’ll give you lots of souvenirs to bring to hell”

Crunch.

The monster’s body warped in the shape of the letter 〈.
Arina drove her fist into it faster than the eye could hope to see.
“Just · how · love · ly · can · Yuu · kun · get · !”
Saying each syllable separately, Arina drove her kick into the monster as she said each one.
And not only from one direction at that, she instantly warped around its body, sometimes the side, sometimes overhead, she rushed to attack it from all directions.
Arina said each syllable separately at first but before long she sped up her talking.
“Say · ing · eve · ry · thing · to · the · end is really difficult, but,”
Her attack speed became faster as well.
“ArinaWantstoShareaLittleBitofThisWithEveryoneFromArina’sHeartArinaWantstoGiveEvenaShortLivedMonsterLikeYouJustaTinyBitofHappinessThoughThatMightBeJustArina’sEgoYuu-KunIsWiseandSublimeandNobleandMostofAllCoolandGentleWhichMakesHimCuteRoséandMistWhoHaveBecomeYuu-Kun’sPropertyMustBeVeryHappyIWonderifTheyNoticedThatofCourseTheyNoticedRightThey’dKnowWithoutHavingtoThinkWhichIsWhyArinaThoughtArinaWantstoGiveEveryonetheSeedsofHappinessYouWanttoBeHappyTooDon’tYouYouDoRightofCourseYouDoThat’sRightYeah”

“So, Happiness Lesson number 1”

“We’ll begin with atoning for your sins by dying♪ Do your best and come back to life, live for Yuu-kun’s sake next time, okay”
Arina poked the thing that had been reduced to a soppy lump of meat from

taking the continuous high speed attacks.
POP, the thing scattered into small pieces, becoming trash in the atmosphere.
“Ah, but that’s what’s called the cycle of reincarnation, isn’t it? ……. hmmm”
Arina dubiously tilted her head slightly to the side, but
“Well, whatever. Let’s just call it the salvation of your sinful soul. Ufufufu, I did something good”
Having decided that by herself she smiled in satisfaction and returned to the surface.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 40 – Epilogue and The Girl Who Loves The Shadows

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/08/orejimi-40/

The sky transformed from blackness to a faint indigo.
Dawn seems to have broken.
Underneath the cold daybreak, there gathered one boy and three girls.
Yuuki, Arina, Mist, and Princess Rosé.
While gazing in amazement at the traces of the hard battles here and there around the Isky residence, the four at least rejoiced in each others' well being.

"… Princess Rosé, are you really alright?" asked Yuuki.
"Yes"
Rosé smiled and nodded.
" '*Arina saved me when it was about to get dangerous*' "
She emphasized the last part meaningfully.
Yuuki tilted his head, dubious, but he didn't think too deeply about it.
"That so? Good on you Arina"
He pat Arina's head.
Arina gladly received it and smiled, "ehehe"
Seeing how she behaved like a small animal in front of Yuuki, Rosé who knew of her true colors made a complicated face. Because Rosé was prohibited from telling him about Arina's action by a strong suggestion, she could not tell Yuuki about her real character.
As Yuuki was patting the head of the murdering demon, he asked.
"Then what happened to that Glenn?"
"Glenn was…"
Rosé gave the collapsed cavern a fleeting glance.
Nikka an Glenn were left as they were, crushed under the rubble.
Rosé acted slightly pained, but she explained.
"He ran away with his accomplice Nikka. They were probably scared of Yuuki-san and Arina-san's power"
"I see…. damn them, I'm not letting them go scot free!"

The thought that Rosé might have abused and killed him probably never crossed his mind.
“I’ll show him my new killing technique the next time I see him!”
Yuuki hit his own fist in anger.
“Yuu-kun, it’s only the first day from us coming to this world, right? How are we going to look for him?”
“Uuuh”
Having nothing but determination, Yuuki had no words to answer Arina’s tsukkomi.
Rosé watched the two with a meek expression.
From her languid face, it looked like she wanted to say something, but she took back her words. She once again resolved herself and called out to Yuuki.
“…… Yuuki-san….., I, I, to Yuuki-san —,”
“Princess Rosé”
Yuuki interrupted her.
“— Everything was Glenn’s doing. Princess did nothing wrong”
Rosé was going to apologise for what she did to him in the dungeon.
Even though she was manipulated, she did spit at him and tell him to die.
Depending on the person, it’s even possible that she would never be forgiven.
But Yuuki foresaw Rosé’s apology and already forgave her.
“B, but, umm…!”
“Princess did nothing wrong, and I don’t want to see you crying again. …. It’s probably harder for you if I tell you not to mind it, but I’m not angry and I’m going to be troubled if you apologise to me”
“……..”
Rosé was speechless and hung her head.
“W, what happened, Yuu-kun? Did Princess do something?”
“Nothing to do with you”
Yuuki brushed off Arina who was poking her nose in.
“Ah, right, this isn’t the time to be doing this! Marquis Isky was captured, we have to hurry and help!”
Accompanied by Arina, he hurried back in the residence.
Rosé looked at their backs, not knowing what to do.
Her feelings will surely be resolved in time.

“— Even though he himself say so…”

There, the girl who was one of the main people rolled up in the affair talked to her.
The Isky House maid, Mist.
Her name did not go down in history — in all likelihood, she was just one of the many people who fell victim to Glenn and Nikka’s ambitions — but thanks to Arina’s intervention, she gained the power to transform into a mist monster and became the girl who led to the resolution of the situation.
“Yuuki was as good as dead for a while because of what Princess said”
The maid Mist glared fearlessly at the Princess, Rosé Vosne-Romanée Grand Cru Ivan, who held status way above her own.
“….. what are you telling me to do, then?”
“Nothing. No apology, no consolation, he doesn’t want any of that. I only want you to remember it. The truth that that person wanted to die because of what you said”
“——…….”
Making a pained face, Rosé said as if swallowing a bitter pill.
“All right. I will carve it onto my heart”
She replied.
Mist nodded.
“Pardon my insolence”
She gave a respectful bow as befits her station.
“That and one more thing”
“What is it now?”
Mist made a grin.

“I won’t lose to the Princess who makes passes at him while clinging to him like a dog”

“Excuse me,” she bowed once again and went after Yuuki.

“…… d …….. dog ……., making, passes…..”
Left behind, Rosé was reeling from the shock of her last words, she stood in a daze with her mouth open for a while. All the more because she knew what she was talking about.
“……”

There, without anyone to hear her, Rosé muttered.

(*Damn you vomit-spewing maid, I'll have you hanged for lèse majesté*)

She then took a deep breath.
"That part just now must have been Arina-san's influence, yup"
Feeling refreshed, she shifted the responsibility to another person and chased after Yuuki.

There was a girl watching them all enter the residence from its roof.
The rising sun shone on her maid-use apron dress.
Her long, beautiful silver hair fluttered in the morning air.
Her petite looking body seemed no older than ten years of age.
She was the maid who attended Madam Welsh and took her assault.
The wounds on her face had completely recovered and she looked as if she was unruffled by it all.
"She took down my Dry County. What is that girl?"
She played with her long, shiny hair, and now looked up to the sky.
The sky where the monster was blown to pieces by Arina's fist.
"I don't know. But she is incredibly strong"
She said as if having a conversation, but there was no one else but her there.
"Hey, me. …. what is it?"
She was talking to and answering herself.
"I wonder if that girl is going to grant my wish.
I don't know.
Nikka-san's studies are no use, huh.
Nikka-san was a liar.
I shouldn't say something like that.
But it's true.
Let's bet on that girl this time.
That's right. But I have to prepare.
I have to make a new Dry County.
That's right. This is exciting. Yes!
……. Hey, — me"

Then the girl made an enraptured face and hugged herself.

"I love me.

— Yes, I love me too.
Fufufu…….”

“Tch, Chaser!!”

An intruder appeared.
…… it was Tris.
“Y, you bastard, how could you send in the Marquis’ impostor!? What about your plan to have the monster mix in with the maids!?”
“Tch,” the girl called Chaser clicked her tongue.
“But that’s what Glenn-san wanted”
“Liar!! …. eeei, it doesn’t matter now! Think of something to help Glenn-sama!”
Chaser then stood up.
“Hey hey, me. What? There’s an intruder. Yeah, it’s irritating”
“Huh!? You, what are you…”

“I don’t need him right? No, don’t need”
Chaser nodded twice.

“What are you talking about, listen here”
Tris’s talking stopped.
He became speechless after seeing the thing that suddenly appeared before him.
… it was *Tris*.
““What … are you?””
The two Trisses trembled and glared at each other.
“W, what are you you bastard!!”
“What are *you* you bastard!?”
“E, eeei, Chaser, don’t try to confuse me with this fake!”
“*You*‘re the fake!!”
“What did you say” “you” “bastard” “damn you?”

““Aaaaah!!!””

The two Trisses wrestled each other, missing their footing, and fell to the ground.
One of them suddenly vanished, leaving only one corpse rolling on the ground.
“Ah – ah. Why can’t he love himself like I do. Poor thing. Do I really think so? … I lied of course. Oh me. Ufufu. Ahahaha.”

As she made two laughing voices, Chaser put on a pair of shadow wings and flapped to the sky.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 41 – A New Menace

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/10/08/orejimi-41/

—— Several days after Arina and Yuuki destroyed Glenn's ambitions.

Light shined down on the underground passage.
There was a gaping hole open on the ceiling, turning into rubble.
Underneath that hill made by the fake Marquis' fist, there lay the remains of a pair of a man and a woman.
Splash, splash, something liquid splashed down there.
There were damaged beakers in the debris, the liquid came from there.
It was the 'something randomly mixed' made by Arina for Glenn to drink.

BAM!

A lacerated arm thrust out from the mountain of rubble.
Slowly, one by one, the arm removed the obstacles, bringing its body out.

It was Sister Nikka.

She groaned bitterly, her whole body covered in Arina's fluid. She began to move, crawling on the floor, but she soon ran out of strength and could no longer move.
Then from the liquid clinging to her body, the 'bugs', visible by the naked eye, wriggled and entered Nikka's body through her wounds and holes.
Nikka started moving once again.

After a long, long time, Nikka arrived at a room Arina did not notice.
It was of similar make to the cell where Marquis Isky was kept, but there was something enshrined inside.
It was a ring. A silver ring decorated with a grotesque design of skulls and snakes.

…… The tragedy called the Great Demon Queen War was Glenn and Nikka's put-up job to begin with, but there is one thing baffling about it.
Even if Rosé was manipulated to play the part of the Demon Queen, how in the world did she defeat legions of troops and strike fear into the world?
That is an impossible feat for Rosé if she were to stay a princess.

The solution to that conundrum is this cursed magic item, the '*Bracelet of Ruin*'.

It gives the wearer power equal to the hero Bacchus, and in return it would drive the wearer insane, a fearsome magical device. Nikka already had it prepared.
"Rosé…. unforgivable… I won't forgive you…"
As she voiced her grudges, Nikka picked the bracelet up.
The bugs crawling all over her body reacted to the bracelet and swarmed.
Nikka put it on her own right arm.
The Bracelet of Ruin let off a dim light and the bugs jumped into Nikka's mouth one after the other.
"Awff… awhfff! A, amazing power…!!"
Nikka stood up and held out her right arm over her head.
"Please wait Glenn-sama! I will drag Rosé off her throne and show you how I create a country for you! Fufufu, ahahaha, Isky Kingdom will reign eternal! Fufufu —— fuhehehehe!!"

BAM!

Having too much power in her hand, Nikka punched a wall.
The hard prison wall crumbled like wet clay.
"Uhehehe, Rosé, Arina, Yuuki…. I'll kill you! You lot who did horrible things to Glenn-sama, I'll *kill you all*!! Once I kill you Glenn-sama will be happy! I'll create Glenn-sama's country! Uhi, uhihihihi!!"
This is what they call *a mad dance*, Nikka danced in a trance with an abnormal expression, then suddenly.
"Ahihi — awfh,"
She collapsed.
"……. I still can't control the power…. But soon…. I'll rain divine punishment on them…."

—— In the history changed by Arina who held in her hand a mysterious power, a threat greater than that is soon to come upon Yuuki and Arina.
Their adventure in the yet unknown world continues.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 42 – Ivan Kingdom Honorary Citizen

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/12/07/orejimi-42/

"Ivan Kingdom First Heir, Her Highness Rosé Vosne-Romanée Gran Cru Ivan, Is at Cooouuurrrt!!"

A bald old guy in prim getup announced with all his power.
I was a bit taken by surprise and at the same time the people around went down on their knees all together and bowed their heads.
Arina and I confusedly did the same.

We are at the Ivan Castle's highest 'Royal Throne Room'
It was tall and wide and had a magnificent air.
The word 'solemn' might be appropriate here.
The first thing that catches your eye would be the huge stone statue.
It's a statue of a sage with a long moustache in a cape, and is about as big as a daibutsu[1].
He's this country's founder, Ivan the First.
Underneath him, he watches over two red thrones with gilded edges.
The thrones were put on a raised platform like an altar and there were stairs leading down from there.
Red carpet was laid down on the room that was probably over 50 meters wide, and there were stone arches on either side in an out of reach place. On them there were cloth with coats of arms drawn on them arranged evenly. The pillars supporting those were made of marble and was decorated with three dimensional ornamentations of mythical beasts, and the mosaic picture on the inside enhances the solemnity of the room.
The high ceiling of the atrium-like hall was painted with angel-looking humanoids with a western touch.
[1] «TN: large Buddha statue»

Inside the room that won't feel strange to be called a temple, were several tens of nobles, officials, and knights in ceremonial garb in a line, and at their head were two rough-looking high schoolers bending down, imitating the people around them.

Yep, they were Arina and Me.

“T, this feels like… a period drama, doesn’t it?”
“They do things the same way, I guess. Though they seem to do dogeza over there”
As we were talking in whispers, a woman slowly entered from behind a door at the back of the altar, accompanied by a deep and solemn pipe organ BGM.

Wearing a dress, white, symbolizing purity.
Her face was covered by a veil, and she was holding a swaying, balance-like metalwork.
She had makeup on her face and vividly colored lipstick.

Though her individuality is being covered up, she is unmistakably Princess Rosé… the girl who fought with us during the Isky Manor Incident.
“Hieee…. L, looking like this, she really looks like a princess doesn’t she?”
“Shush!”
I shut Arina up, but I feel the same way.
Taking her time, Princess Rosé sat down on the throne.
The BGM stopped right at that moment.
One of the nobles lined alongside us stood up.
“I congratulate Your Highness for resolving this case yourself. All the retainers present wish to offer you our heartfelt thanks”
“It was all in service to the Fatherland”
Princess Rosé responded from her high station.
Her voice was devoid of emotion or intonation, but it resounded through the whole throne room.
The room might have been constructed that way.
Then Rosé said, “Yuuki, Arina, raise your heads”
“… huh, us?”
“w, w, we can stand, right?”
“She did tell us to…”
“Y, Yuu-kun…”
While we were hesitating, the noble next to us yelled.
“You’re in the presence of Her Highness, hurry it up!”
… with a murderous voice.

“I don’t mind. Stay there”
As Princess Rosé said so, she stood up and went down from the altar.

Immediately, our surroundings started to get noisy for some reason.
“I think we did something bad?”
“M, m, maybe. But I don’t know what…”
Princess Rosé went down the stairs and stood in front of us.

“Sorry, I took you along for some formalities all of a sudden, you must’ve been surprised”
She said to us in that tone.

“Y, Your Highness, to step down from the throne for commoners is…”
One of the nobles protested, but…
“Considering their achievements, it’s obvious, no? Or do you have something to say about my *friends*?”
As Princess said so, he nervously fell silent.
“I’d like to introduce you two to everyone so please stand. … you can relax you know”
Even if you say so…
The two of us stood up and looked at each other as if to say “what do we do now?”
Then Princess Rosé prompted us to go toward the stairs.
From a slight distance, we stood in front of the nobles.
Just like some honor students being presented before the morning assembly.

“Shimoyama Yuuki and Sakurai Arina. These two risked their lives protecting me against Marquis Isky’s son Glenn Irish Isky’s treason.
If not for them, I probably wouldn’t be here safe and sound right now.
I shall grant these two the title of Ivan Kingdom Honorary Citizens.
By the name of Rosé Vosne-Romanée Gran Cru Ivan, I grant them all the rights and social services befitting a citizen of this country.
They shall not lack for anything as long as they are within the country
… though normally I would’ve granted them medals and peerages”
Princess Rosé sent the nobles a cold glare.
“But it seems that certain *honored personages* would be inconvenienced by that”

… shouldn’t you just *not* have said that?
or so I thought, but given the time and place, I stayed silent.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 43 – Five at the Bar

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2015/12/16/orejimi-43/

“Ha ha ha ha! The Princess did that!”
“No no no, that’s nothing to laugh at you know… ku ku ku”
When I told the guard knights the story, they rolled in laughter.
“No, seriously, it’s not something to laugh at. Thinking about the mood that time, I didn’t feel like I was alive”
“Yer right”
“Ha ha ha, careful when you go out at night”
Their names were Koji and Kars.
The guard knights we met the first time.
When Arina and I protected Princess to the end in the Isky residence, these two opened up to us.

A whole day after the incident passed.
We rested our bodies in the Isky residence, and the next day a coach came to pick Princess up.
We were then given a room and we stayed there from then on.
We were now in a nearby bar.
It was called a ‘cheap restaurant’ in this world, but basically, it was a ‘bar-room’.
The city was wrapped in an air of enthusiasm since noon, there were hawking voices, haggling voices, the voices of street performers, *hyaho–i*s, and the sounds of musical instruments that look like bagpipes and accordions. This bar is no exception, it’s noisy with the sound of people ordering sausages and drink refills.

There was me, Arina, Koji, and Kars sitting around the round table sharing an extra-large portion of pasta and eating. Though it’s called pasta it’s a strange dish that had small cuts like Soba, and you put it in your personal plate and eat it with salty soup.
There,
“I’ve bought juice refills”
Mist came along.

She's now changed from wearing maid clothes to some linen commoner clothes.
She decided to leave the Isky residence and come together with us.
……. well, I do have to take some kind of responsibility for her body, so I can't exactly say no.
"Sorry"
"Nah, it's alright"
Since this is a bar, you have to go right to the counter if you want to order something other than alcohol.
If you want alcohol, the waitresses always carry some on their trays so they can quickly offer some, but drinks other than that take some time so they don't really like it.
"You don't drink booze? What are you, a kid?"
"I *am* a kid"
"But you're fifteen already, aren't you?"
"In my country, fifteen still counts as a kid!"
You yourselves, what are you doing drinking since noon!
"Anyway, why wasn't Mist called to the ceremony, too? After all the things you went through together with us…" I said, to which Mist replied with her own guess.
"I dunno. Maybe if they did they feel like they have to invite all the residence's maids?"
Though the other maids have slightly different circumstances.
"I'm sure princess didn't call her because of a grudge"
Suddenly Arina said something like that.
"Huh? Why?"
"Even if Arina is stupid you can't look down on Arina's womanly intuition. Fu fu fu"
I don't get what she's saying at all.
Is she drunk?

"… but seriously, it was a terrifying thing, huh"
Koji said while pouring his drink.
"Even though Glenn *was* her fiancé, but for him to even cast a spell on her and try to hijack the country is…"
"Yeah, it's good that it ended up just as an attempt. Not only the Princess herself

was put in danger, but even the whole country could also go under”
Kars nodded.

——though it actually *didn’t* end as an attempt.

The fact that the Princess came *this* close to being raped by Glenn was of course a secret of the state.
Not even these two were told the details of how the incident went.
The Princess discovered the bugs, a frenzied Glenn released a monster, and we protected the Princess from it.
That’s roughly what they were told.
If those parasites entered the Princess even once, she wouldn’t be able to wear that dress of chastity.
She’s really having it hard.

“But here’s where it starts, you know. There’s no way Marquis Isky doesn’t get the blame for this”
… The Marquis is probably having it the hardest.
His son became a traitor, he himself is paralysed from the waist down, and Madam Welsh and Tris was killed by his own fake, even the maids left one after the other, saying that the house is cursed.
He was so totally depressed he wouldn’t leave his room.
“Which leaves us with who to defend the Cidre border?”
“The castle officials could take on the job for a while, but…”
“They’re in way over their heads, they can’t hold it for long”
“You can say that again. Also, there’s the fact that the Princess has no fiancé now”

“What happens now that she doesn’t have a fiancé?”
I interjected.

“Actually, His Majesty the King is in a bad physical condition right now”
“He didn’t appear at your ceremony either, didn’t he?”
Ah, now that you mention it.
If they went so far as doing something flashy like that the King would normally be there.
“His Majesty had long been bedridden”
“I don’t mean to jinx it, but in the one in a million chance that it happens, the

country might have no King”
“But there’s Princess Rosé so it’s not like you’re going to be out all of a sudden, right?”
As I said that, the knights looked away as if they had something difficult to say.

“……. it’s impossible for the Princess”
Mist then continued from there.

“This country, even us commoners knew that even though we’re not at a direct war with our neighbors, we’re at a confrontation with them. If the King died and we’re only left with the Princess, everyone would feel uneasy”
“Uneasy?”
” ‘Will Cidre come and invade’, ‘Will the Princess be alright if that happens’, ‘If we’re going to lose, wouldn’t we be better off surrendering from the start’ …. things like that”
“By saying things like that, the morale of the country will affect our fighting strength”
“Not just war. We also risk famine because farmers leave their fields and fishermen run away”
“Before that happens, Princess Rosé needs a strong fiancé”

—— which is how Glenn came into the picture.

If what Tris so proudly said was right, Marquis Isky was a military family. Professionals that had been on watch against Cidre and protecting the country for a long time.
If you ignore what’s inside, they had a name worthy of being the next King.
“But if Princess Rosé’s fiancé was decided with that kind of reason, she wouldn’t like it”
“As the ones who are always next to her, we know that better than anyone”
“We can only give up and say it can’t be helped”
I’ve learnt things like that when studying history, but when it happens to a girl I know it’s….
“It’s …. a story that makes me sick”
“—— Yuuki, you’re a good guy, huh”
Kars suddenly said.
“Worrying about other people sounds like a simple thing, but that distinguishes

character. If Glenn had kindness like you, none of this would've happened"
Even if you say that, I can only smile bitterly.
"I'm not planning to, but even so, there's nothing I can do for her right now"
"No, well, I wonder about that"
"From the way things are going, I think there's soon going to be a time we have to borrow your strength"
"……."
I thought for a while, then…
"Hey"
I asked Arina.
"…… I don't mean to forget all about it, but the reason we came"
We were rolled up in the Isky incident and lazed around for several days, but the real reason we went on this journey was for the Hero Arina to defeat the Demon Lord.
The real protagonist should be Arina.
"But right now we don't know where we should go …., um"
"—— If Yuu-kun says so, then Arina is fine with it"
I wanted to stay here until Princess' troubles calmed down.
That was what I was going to say, but Arina answered before I could.

"Then we should first prepare the things we'll need for daily life"
Mist stood up.
"Yuu-kun, you don't know how we buy things here in this country, do you? Come with me"
This is reassuring. I had trouble back in the first village.
"You're a lifesaver"
I thanked Mist.

"A, A, Arina goes too!"
Arina hurriedly stood up.
"At least to carry the things…"
"Arina-chan should go back and sweep the room"
"Eh, but"
"The room hasn't been used for a while so it's quite dusty. If you don't sweep it while it's light out we can't use it to sleep in you know?"
"B, but…"

“Okay, so Arina can go shopping, can you do it?”
“……. uuu, …….. auuuu, okay, Arina, will go back, and sweep…”
Arina sank back to her seat dejectedly.
“All right. Yuu-kun…. let’s go!”
I’m sure I misheard Mist mumble ‘I won’ there somewhere.

“A woman’s will is trully terrifying, huh”
“Well, it’s fun for those of us watching by the sidelines”
Koji and Kars muttered something, but I pretended not to hear and left the bar-room with Mist.

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...

Chapter 44 – Castle Town Market

https://larvyde.wordpress.com/2016/01/08/orejimi-44/

In the castle town of Ivan, there is the symbolic white Ivan Castle in the north. The town spread out left and right from the brick-paved central street that came from that castle. Right in its center there was a market crowded with stalls and peddlers and a gigantic fountain equipped with a magic device. Branch roads radiated out from there in all directions.
From above, the town looked like a cut-up pizza.

The town was surrounded by the massive walls protecting it that doesn't let monsters or trespassers through.
In order to enter you need to pass through checkpoints.

The south part is heavy on the trade institutions and as you go further north it turns more and more into housing.
On either side of the roads that stretch all over the city, there stood three story row houses made of stone where the people living in this city: merchants, soldiers, or artisans, could rest their bodies.
Moreover, as you get closer to the Ivan castle, you will see libraries, art galleries, theaters, cathedrals, and also the elite housing districts where the residences of government officials and high ranking knights live are. Though the common folk don't come near the place in their daily lives.

"… so, you should be able to understand it this way"
Mist explained for me, pointing at a map.
"Yeah, you made it quite easy to understand. *Gracias,*" I said, to which Mist smiled.

"If it's the castle town, I think you can just about get anything"
"First we look at what's there, should we?"
"I guess so…. Since we're putting tableware off until later, we should first go for magic cores, then some change of clothes"
I took a pen and note block from the E:ID phone and took notes.
"Also, unless we don't go and fetch fruits and hardbread, we'll be in trouble once

the shops close”
“I see. You don’t have convenience stores here”
“Conveni?”
“A store in my world that stocks everything. It opens all day and doesn’t close even in the middle of the night”

After all this while, I can tell Mist everything honestly.
About us coming from another world, about Arina being the Hero, and others besides that.
Mist thought I was joking when she first heard, but she’s seen the power of te E:ID phone, so she quickly believed me.
… well, the smartphone is a piece of rather overly advanced technology even in my original world, after all.

“Hmm…, won’t the person keeping the shop die like that?”
“They hire people to take turns working there. … though there *are* people who collapse from overwork”
While having small chat with Mist, I finally reached the central market.
At the place we reached there were merchants underneath roofs like the eaves of a house made by just stretching a piece of cloth, yelling at full volume to attract customers.
Around them there are bustling crowds of people jammed together like there was some kind of event.
“There sure are a lot of people…”
I now understood why Mist said ‘we should go to the market while our load is still light’ on the way here.
We can’t go through this crowd if we carried other shopping items.
Well, I *could* just put them away in the E:ID phone, though.

“Come, let’s go!”
A high-spirited Mist took me along and charged into the place.
We headed towards our destination shop by parting the sea of people, which was almost like a full body slam attack.
But just like the jam of people in a crowded train, we almost couldn’t get through.
“Sheesh!! Even though I could easily pass through if I turned into mist”

Mist yelled, part angry, part irritated.
“Nah, you better not. What about your clothes after that? You’re not going to go shopping naked are you?”
“S, s, shopping n, n, naked — !?”
I only wanted to make a little retort, but Mist reacted more than I imagined.
“W, why does it have to be that! Why does it have to be that situation!!” she said with a red face.
“No, well, your clothes come off when you turn into mist, right? and you can’t go shopping while you’re in mist form, right? That means you’re going to have to go shopping stark naked”
“S, s, stark…”
For an instant, Mist put her hands to her cheeks and took a deep breath, *hooh*.
I wondered what’s going on with her, but then…
“Stupid—!!! N, n, no way I’m doing that!!”
She suddenly blew up.
“Not going to do that, *definitely* won’t! Naked! What the hell! No way I’m doing that!”
She said incomprehensibly.
She made so much of a ruckus the other passers-by looked at us, wondering what happened.
“H, hey hey! It’s just a little joke, don’t be so angry…”
“It’s cause Yuu-kun thinks up something stupid! Ah, geez, aaaah!! It’s embarrassing!!”
“I get it, I get it, just, calm down. Let’s hurry and go shopping. Okay?”
“Right, shopping, hurry!! We were going to go shopping!! Come on, let’s go, hurry!!”
I totally did *not* get just what the blazes happened with Mist.
In any case, I had to chase after her so I don’t lose sight of her.

While Mist and Yuuki were going through seven hells in the crowd of people.
On the roof of a tenement right next to them there were two men, watching.
Buildings in these parts were built in rectangular shapes so they had wide roofs and made positions that were invisible from directly below.
The men, whose faces were hidden by their hoods, had the appearance of merchants, but their atmosphere clearly showed that they weren’t anybody

honest.
They each locked on to Yuuki with small spyglasses.
“So that’s *Shimoyama Yuuki* …”
“Looks just as unusual as we heard. There’s no mistaking it”
They said to each other.

“I was wondering what kind of guy could take down Isky’s son”
“He doesn’t look like much”
The men smiled.
“What do we do with the woman?”
“It’ll be a pain if she made a fuss. We’ll deal with her as well”
Their eyes reflected Yuuki leaving the market for somewhere else.
“Let’s move,” said the men as they stood up to chase after Yuuki.
One of them jumped down from the six-meter tall building onto a back alley.
He then chanted, ” ‘Millifly’ ” to a magic core he brought right as he was about to collide with the ground. He then floated and landed safely.
He looked around to make sure it’s safe, and after he’s sure there were no people around, he looked towards the roof and signaled,
“Oy, it’s safe!”

…….

“…… hm?”
But there was no response.
“Oy, what’s wrong? Get a move on!!”
As he said that wit irritatedly, something fell down.
The small something fell to the ground with a *clunk* sound.
The man looked towards it, but ignored it, thinking that it was a small pebble.
“What’re you doing!? We’re going to lose him!”
Clunk, another small white pebble fell as he said that.
“…?”
What’s that now? the man thought, tilting his head.
Another stone fell down.
This one’s bigger.
The next stone.
This one was long like a tree branch, but snapped as it hit the ground.

Suspecting something unusual, the man picked up the branch-like stone.
Then stones came raining down, each in different shapes and sizes.

Just when the man noticed they were '*human bones*', a skull hit the ground with a *clonk* and cracked.

"Eeek!!?"
The man, who lived a life outside of human morals, became frightened and paled at the sudden downpour of bones.

"Oh my, I'm so sorry"
There was a young girl in maid clothes holding a broom and dustpan.

It was Arina.

"I didn't know there was a person below. I have to properly make sure when cleaning trash"
She said as she gathered the scattered bones in the dustpan.
"T, trash… !?"
Seeing how Arina treated the bones like trash, the man became frightened and stepped back.
"Yes, that's right. If we don't properly separate trash, they're going to become a problem later. See, people in this world still don't know about these things….
This is noncombustible trash, and…."
Arina then took out a large black plastic bag.
It was filled with something liquid-ish, it jiggles when she struck it.

"This is organic trash♪"

The man faintly realized.
Where the surrounding meat from the human bones that had been picked clean were.
What the contents of the jiggly bag is.

And 'to whom' those bones and the bag's contents belonged.

"Ah, that's right! This looks like it can still be used, Please take it if you like. It's called 'reuse', you know what it means?"
Arina pushed some neatly folded linen cloth at the man.
The clothes of the man he talked to just moments earlier.

“Eeeek!? N, n, no way, these bones…”
The man trembled in fear, and Arina said to him,
“People who won’t answer Arina’s questions properly is not needed in Yuu-kun’s world, you see, and if you don’t need something, then it’s trash, right? Arina thinks about Yuu-kun’s world’s ecology, too. Arina separates trash properly. … ah, but this is troubling”
She then put her hand on her face and made a troubled look.
“Arina ran out of trash bags. Arina’s bad with planning”

She made a broad grin.

“So to not create more trash, please pay attention and answer properly, okay? Who’s the one making you do this? And for what reason are you watching Yuu-kun?”

⇐ Previous | TOC | Next ⇒

Like this:

Like Loading...